



CIHM/ICMH Microfiche Series.

CIHM/ICMH Collection de microfiches.

Ø



Canadian Institute for Historical Microreproductions / Institut canadian de microreproductions historigues



Technical and Bibliographic Notes/Notes techniques et bibliographiques

The institute has attempted to obtain the best original copy available for filming. Features of this copy which may be bibliographically unique, which may alter any of the images in the reproduction, or which may significantly change the usual method of filming, are checked below.

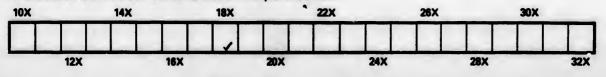
. ____

.

L'Institut a microfilmé le meilleur exemplaire qu'il lui a été possible de se procurer. Les détails de cet exemplaire qui sont peut-être uniques du point de vue bibliographique, qui peuvent modifier une image reproduite, ou qui peuvent exiger une modification dans la méthode normale de filmage sont indiqués ci-dessous.

Coloured covers/ Couverture de couleur		Coloured pages/ Pages de couleur	
Covers damaged/ Couverture endommagée		Pages damaged/ Pages endommagées	
Covers restored and/or laminated/ Couverture restaurée et/ou pelliculée		Pages restored and/or laminated/ Pages restaurées et/ou pelliculées	
Cover title missing/ Le titre de couverture manque		Pages discoloured, stained or foxed/ Pages décolorées, tachetées ou piquées	
Coloured meps/ Cartes géographiques en couleur	2	Pages detached/ Pages détachées	
Coloured ink (i.e. other than blue or black)/ Encre de couleur (i.e. autre que bleue ou noire)	\checkmark	Showthrough/ Transparence	
Coloured plates and/or illustrations/ Planches et/ou illustrations en couleur		Quality of print varies/ Qualité inégale de l'impression	
Bound with other material/ Relié avec d'autres documents		Includes supplementary material/ Comprend du matérial supplémentaire	
Tight binding may cause shadows or distortion along interior margin/ Lareliure serrée peut causer de l'ombre ou de la		Only edition available/ Seule édition disponible	
distortion le long de la marge intérieure Blank leaves added during restoration may appear within the text. Whenever possible, these have been omitted from filming/ li se peut que certaines pages blanches ajoutées lors d'une restauration apparaissent dans le texte, mais, lorsque cela était possible, ces pages n'ont pas été filmées.		Pages wholly or partially obscured by errata slips, tissues, etc., have been refilmed to ensure the best possible image/ Les pages tot viewent ou partiellement obscurcies par un feuillet d'errata, une pelure, etc., ont été filmées à nouveau de façon à obtenir la meilleure image possible.	
Additional comments:/ Commentaires supplémentaires;			

This item is filmed at the reduction ratio checked below/ Ce document est filmé au taux de réduction indiqué ci-dessous.



The co to the

The impossib of the filming

Origin beginn the las slon, c other first p sion, a or illus

The la shall c TINUE which

Maps, differe entirel beginn right a require metho iaire s détails ques du nt modifier diger une s filmage

d/ Juées

aire

by errata ned to

ent une pelure, facon à The copy filmed here has been reproduced thanks to the generosity of:

Library of the Public Archives of Canada

The images appearing here are the best quality possible considering the condition and legibility of the original copy and in keeping with the filming contract specifications.

Original copies in printed paper covers are filmed beginning with the front cover and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression, or the back cover when appropriate. All other original copies are filmed beginning on the first page with a printed or illustrated impression, and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression.

The last recorded frame on each microfiche shall contain the symbol \longrightarrow (meaning "CON-TINUED"), or the symbol ∇ (meaning "END"), whichever applies.

Maps, plates, charts, etc., may be filmed at different reduction ratios. Those too large to be entirely included in one exposure are filmed beginning in the upper left hand corner, left to right and top to bottom, as many frames as required. The following diagrams illustrate the method:



L'exemplaire filmé fut reproduit grâce à la générosité de:

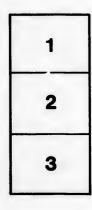
La bibliothèque des Archives publiques du Canada

Les images suivantes ont été reproduites avec le plus grand soin, compte tenu de la condition et de la netteté de l'exemplaire filmé, et en conformité avec les conditions du contrat de filmage.

Les exemplaires originaux dont la couverture en papier est imprimée sont filmés en commençant par le premier plât et en terminant soit par la dernière page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration, soit par le second plat, selon le cas. Tous les autres exemplaires originaux sont filmés en commençant par la première page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration et en terminant par la dernière page qui comporte une telle empreinte.

Un des symboles suivants apparaître sur la dernière image de chaque microfiche, selon le cas: le symbole \longrightarrow signifie "A SUIVRE", le symbole \forall signifie "FIN".

Les cartes, pianches, tableaux, etc., peuvent être filmés à des taux de réduction différents. Lorsque le document est trop grand pour être reproduit en un seui cliché, il est filmé à partir de l'angle supérieur gauche, de gauche à droite, et de haut en bas, en prenant le nombre d'images nécessaire. Les diagrammes suivants illustrent la méthode.



1	2	3
4	5	6



EXCURSIONS

IN AND ABOUT

NEWFOUNDLAND,

DURING THE YEARS 1839 AND 1840.

By J. B. JUKES, M.A., F.G.S., F.C.P.S.;

OF ST. JOHN'S COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE;

LATE GEOLOGICAL SURVEYOR OF NEWFOUNDLAND.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOLUME I.

LONDON: JOHN MURRAY, ALBEMARLE STREET. 1842. LONDON Printed by WILLIAM CLOWES and SONS, Stamford Street.

.

PAAP FC 2167.2 J9 V.1

CAPTAIN PRESCOTT, R.N., C.B.,

то

LATE GOVERNOR OF THE COLONY OF NEWFOUNDLAND AND ITS DEPENDENCIES,

&c. &c.

DEAR SIR,

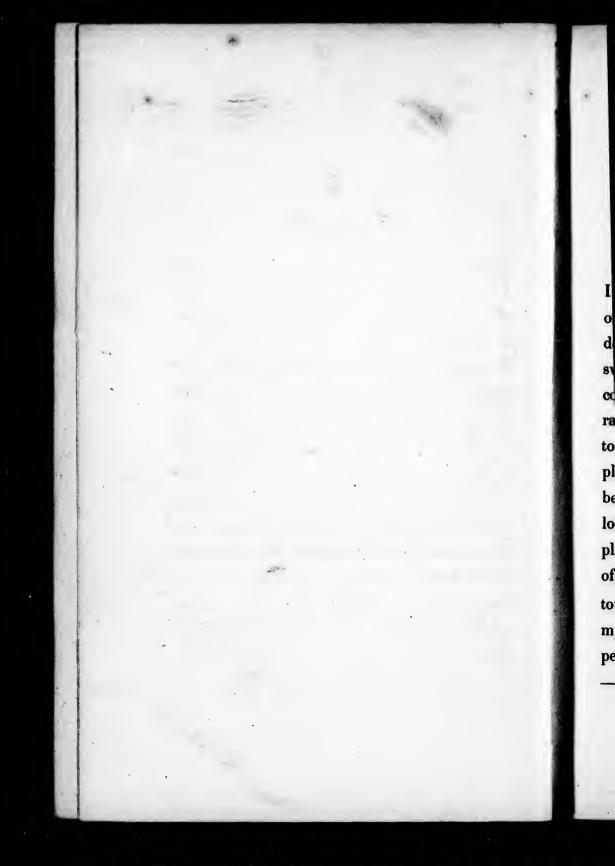
It would be an act of ingratitude on my part were I to publish any work relating to Newfoundland, and omit in some way to acknowledge the constant public support and the kind private hospitality with which you were so good as to honour me during my stay in that country.

Allow me, then, to dedicate this little book to you, as a slight mark of my respect and attachment; and in so doing to assure you that your kindness is gratefully remembered by,

Dear Sir,

Your very obliged and obedient friend and servant,

J. B. JUKES.



PREFACE.

I FEEL that the publication of a book made up of such slight materials as the following notes demands some apology. My reason, then, for sweeping out my note-books and laying their contents before the public is, the utter ignorance which prevails in England with regard to Newfoundland. Of this ignorance I must plead guilty to the possession of a full share before my visit to that country. Before I looked into books to learn something of the place I was going to, I did not know the name of the capital, or whether the island had any towns or permanent inhabitants or not. Since my return from the country I have found many persons-I may say, indeed, almost every one -in the same state of entire darkness on

PREFACE.

the subject. Very great ignorance of the condition and extent of our Colonial possessions, generally, prevails indeed among all ranks of society, except in those classes connected with them by trade; but Newfoundland, the oldest of all our Colonies, seems to have become utterly blotted out of our recollection, or is known only by its dogs. I thought, therefore, there might be a sufficient number of people willing to know something about it, and who would allow me to take them by the ear while I told them what I had seen of it. Scarcely had I begun, however, to enter on this task, when I was called to commence preparations for an excursion of some years, to another quarter of the globe. The marks of extreme haste, and many slips of the pen, will, no doubt, be abundantly evident to the reader, but let me assure him that such haste was the result of uncontrollable circumstances. and not a mark of disrespect towards him.

0

L

la

pe G

lit

m

th C

le

ta

hi

as fo

vi

PREFACE.

e of the al possesnong all sses conoundland. s to have collection. ht. thereumber of about it. m by the een of it. enter on ommence years, to marks of the pen, nt to the ich haste mstances, rds him.

Should he desire to be more thoroughly and better informed on many points with respect to Newfoundland, I beg to refer him to a work shortly to be published by my friend Dr. Stabb of St. John's, which will, I believe, contain a full historical and statistical account of the island.

It now only remains for me to state that the Legislature of Newfoundland voted in their last session the sum of 100*l*. to defray the expense of printing my Report on the Physical Geography and Geology of the island, and lithographing and colouring its accompanying maps and sections. That vote, with the rest of the money bill, was subsequently lost in the Council. At my request, however, His Excellency the Governor, Sir John Harvey, has taken upon himself to pay this grant, and to him my acknowledgments are accordingly due, as enabling me to put everything in train before I leave England. I must here also pub-

vii

PREFACK.

licly offer my thanks to the Honourable J. Crowdy, the Colonial Secretary, for the uniform courtesy and kindness I have received from him in this and other matters.

Wolverhampton, February 8th, 1842.

viii

urable J. the uni-

CONTENTS OF VOLUME I.

CHAPTER I.

Departure from Liverpool—Falling in with Ice—Landing at St. John's—Visit to Portugal Cove, Cape St. Francis, Shoal Bay, Bell Isle, and Harbour Grace . Page 1

CHAPTER II.

Engage the Beaufort — Visit to Harbour Grace, Cupid's Cove, Brigus, the Cat's Cove Hills, Holyrood Butterpots, and Kelly's Island — Visit to Carbonear, Bacalao Island — Ice Islands off Trinity Harbour — Visit to Trinity, Random Sound, Come-by-Chance, Chapel Arm, New Harbour, Heart's Content — Return to St. John's . 37

CHAPTER III.

CHAPTER IV.

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER V.

Raised Beach—Crab's River—A bed of Coal—South side of St. George's Bay—A Storm—Gypsum beds—The Red Indians—Their Superstitions—Coal—Wreck of the Onondago—Narrow Channel . . . Page 156

CHAPTER VI.

The Dead Islands—George Harvey—Want of Lighthouses —A Ball—La Poile Bay — Arrival at St Peter's—The Cod Fishery—St. Lawrence—Reach Placentia—Visit Trepassée and Ferryland, and return to St. John's. 182

CHAPTER VII.

Arrival at St. John's and meeting with Dr. Stuwitz—Christmas Amusements—Description of a Newfoundland Settlement—The Fishery—Habits of the Planters—Character of the Natives—Politics—Fogs of Newfoundland. 219

CHAPTER VIII.

t

t

I

d-South side m beds-The -Wreck of the . Page 156

of Lighthouses Peter's—The acentia—Visit John's. 182

witz—Christoundland Setrs—Character dland. 219

to the lcetting through hter amongst Capture of a cies of Seal vell upon the . 250

EXCURSIONS

IN AND ABOUT

NEWFOUNDLAND.

CHAPTER I.

Departure from Liverpool—Falling in with Ice—Land in St. John's—Visit to Portugal Cove, Cape St. Francis, Shoal Bay, Bell Isle, and Harbour Grace.

April 11th, 1839.—SAILED from Liverpool in the merchant brig "Diana," bound for St. John's, Ne vfoundland.

May 4th.—The temperature of the air on the open sea had been mild and pleasant, the thermometer frequently rising to 60° in the middle of the day; for the last day or two, however, it had been gradually falling. Today, being in long. 48° W., lat. 47° N., there was a thick fog, occasionally lifting and clearing off in open drifts in various directions, and suddenly closing in again. The temperature VOL. I.

EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND. [CHAP. I.

of the water fell rapidly as we proceeded on our course, and about two o'clock it was only The air, which at ten A.M. was 54, had 35°. likewise sunk to 38°. The swell of the sea gradually subsided, and the vessel was steadier than it had been since we sailed. A sharp look-out was accordingly kept, and as we were sitting after dinner in the cabin, about four P.M., the cry of "Ice a-head" brought us all on deck, and the vessel was put about immediately. I peered over the side into the driving fog, but could see nothing but small jagged pieces of white ice, hardly to be distinguished from the foam on the crest of a wave, whirling about in the eddy of the vessel. Beyond them was a kind of white obscure, that might probably be the sheen of the ice through the fog. Practised eyes, I suppose, saw more, and it was said to be the edge of a large field of ice, or rather to be the edge of "the ice," which was apparently understood to extend to the north for an indefinite distance. We soon left it far behind, and drove off to the southward. On returning to the cabin, the captain was congratulated on having made a good "ice-fall," and hopes expressed of as good a

li

SI

h

d

S

h

u

W

o

la

st

[Снар. І.

eded on vas only 54. had the sea steadier A sharp we were out four ht us all t immethe drivut small o be disrest of a he vessel. cure, that through w more, arge field the ice," extend to We soon he southe captain a good good a

CHAP. I.]

A GOOD ICE-FALL.

land-fall. Had we struck the ice in the night. we should probably have got entangled among it, and been greatly hindered and delayed on our voyage. During the two or three following days, large pieces of ice and small icebergs were frequently seen. Fogs also were frequent, occasionally clearing off entirely, and then recurring in a most singular manner. There seemed to me to be large well-defined banks of fog resting on the sea in various places, or moving slowly about, into and out of which we passed almost instantaneously, and which were not very easily observed by a person a little distance outside of them, with a bright sun overhead.

May 8th.—At sunset last night we saw the high land about Cape St. Francis, clearly defined on the horizon. At the sight of it, I seemed to myself, for the first time, really to have left the English shores. The vessel had unconsciously been associated in the mind with England, and appeared as it were a part of it: now, however, we looked on a distant land, and were really about to enter on a strange scene.

On coming on deck this morning we were

в 2

EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND. [C

[CHAP. I.

n

b

M

N

a

fe

to

p

SC

h

tł

g

close in-shore, standing backwards and forwards across the mouth of the harbour, with a light, but bitterly cold breeze blowing off the The cold wind blowing over the ice the land. other day was not to be compared to the biting keenness of this, although the thermometer was a degree or two higher, being about 41°. We were compelled, for the first time since leaving Liverpool, to light a fire in the cabin-stove, in order to breakfast in comfort. The first view of the harbour of St. John's is very striking. Lofty precipitous cliffs, of hard dark red sandstone and conglomerate, range along the coast, with deep water close at their feet. Their beds plunge from a height of from 400 to 700 feet, at an angle of 70°, right into the sea, where they are ceaselessly dashed against by the unbroken swell of the Atlantic This immense sea-wall is the side of waves. a narrow ridge of hills which strike along the coast here, and through which there are occasional narrow vallies or ravines. These transverse valleys cut down through the range to various depths, and the bottom of one being about fifty or sixty feet below the level of the sea forms the entrance to the harbour

CHAP. I.] ST. JOHN'S HARBOUR.

of St. John's, and is appropriately termed the Narrows. Inside, the harbour expands and trends towards the S.W., and the land on the other side of it has a much more gentle slope, and a much less height than that immediately on the coast. It is also of a better quality, and more fertile. The dark naked rocks that frown along the coast near St. John's, their stern outlines unbroken by any other vegetation than a few stunted firs that seem huddled together in the more sheltered nooks and hollows, give a stranger but an unfavourable idea of the country he has come to visit, and seem to realize all the accounts he may have heard or read of the coldness and barrenness of the land. As we sailed backwards and forwards across the mouth of the Narrows, which in one place is only 220 yards across, with rocky precipitous heights of 500 feet on each side, we caught a view of the town, which, from its being built for the most part of unpainted wood, had a sufficiently sombre and dismal appearance. The harbour, however, was full of vessels, and on landing there seemed to be much bustle and business going on. The melting of the previous

[CHAP. I.

and forr, with a g off the ne ice the to the the therer, being the first a fire in o comfort. John's is s. of hard te, range e at their height of 70°, right ly dashed e Atlantic he side of along the are occaese transrange to one being level of harbour

EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND. [CHAP. I.

winter's snow had, however, furrowed the streets in various places with gutters running across them, while from their ill-kept state, from their long, straggling, and irregular appearance, the narrow dirty alleys and lanes leading out of them, the dingy aspect of the unpainted houses, and the groups of idle and half-drunken sailors and fishermen, the absence of street lamps and drains, the entire want of all police, and the air of disorder and confusion which reigned throughout, it was evident that the scene was a foreign one. I found afterwards that it was just the season when a number of vessels, having shortly returned from the sealing expedition, their crews were all loitering about with money in their pockets, and the merchants' wharfs and premises were crowded with their men unloading the vessels, and preparing the seals for the oil-vats. My first impulse on landing was to ascend the ridge on the south-east side of the harbour, which, from the people all using compass bearings instead of the true, is called the south side. and the ridge the south side hill. From its top, which is about 750 feet above the sea, there

k

CHAP. I.] A FIRE IN ST. JOHN'S.

[CHAP. I.

wed the running ept state, gular apand lanes ect of the of idle men, the ains, the ir of disthroughne was a hat it was of vessels, ealing exing about the mercrowded ssels, and My first the ridge ur, which, bearings outh side, om its top, sea, there

was an extensive prospect over sea and land. On returning to the town, myself and a fellow voyager found it quite destitute of inns and hotels, but were lucky enough to engage very comfortable rooms in a private lodging-house.

May 9th to 20th.-Having called on the governor and delivered my credentials, I found myself most kindly and hospitably received, not only by himself and family and the authorities generally, but by a number of private persons and families, to whom I was gradually introduced. And here, once for all, let me record my thanks to the many kind friends I had the pleasure of making, for their abundant hospitality, and assure them, at the same time, that I shall studiously avoid the ill-judged ostentation of gratitude, of dragging their names before the public. On the evening of May 12th, we were alarmed by the cry of fire, and in a few hours a block of houses in the principal street, in the centre of the town, was burnt to the ground. The behaviour of the military and the fire companies was very good, and to their exertions and those of the more respectable inhabitants was owing the preservation of the

EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND. [CHAP. I.

town. I was, however, much struck with the stupid indifference of a large part of the lower class of the population, as compared with the great, and sometimes self-baffling readiness and eagerness of the population of any large town in England, in similar circumstances. No inducement or excitement beyond that of present pay and reward scemed sufficient to rouse one of the hundreds of great idle fellows that stood around to stir hand or foot for the preservation of the houses and property about. I was afterwards told, indeed, that by far too many of the population looked upon a fire as a godsend, more especially if it reached or threatened a merchant's store, when a regular system of plunder was carried out unblushingly, and, as it were, by prescriptive right.

I think I afterwards perceived the causes of the low state of moral feeling* exhibited on this and one or two similar points, by people that in other respects had many excellent qualities.

* The former state of vassalage in which they were held by the merchants,—the adventurous nature of their pursuits leading them to look on danger or misfortune as necessary and inevitable,—as also the want of education, and community of feeling, and of a popular opinion, are among the causes alluded to.

[CHAP. I.

with the the lower with the readiness ny large mstances. d that of ficient to le fellows ot for the ty about. y far too a fire as ached or a regular unblushright. causes of ed on this le that in lities.

y were held eir pursuits is necessary nd commuamong the

CHAP. I.]

THE NEW ROADS.

During these first ten days I rode out several times with the governor and the surveyor-general, visiting Portugal Cove, Logie Bay, and some other parts of the neighbourhood. Several roads out of St. John's have been recently constructed, and are, for about five miles, sufficiently good to ride or drive on. The road to Portugal Cove is finished from end to end, being about nine miles and a half. The other roads beyond the first five or six miles are either bare rugged rock, wet moss and morass, or a bed of boulders, like the bed of a torrent. Sometimes a combination of all three within the space of twenty yards offers a choice of evils. Except on a regularly constructed road, or over a cleared and cultivated field, it would be quite impracticable to take either horse, mule, or ass a single yard. The country in the interior rises into many flat-topped or rounded ridges, having an average height of 500 or 600 feet above the sea. One rounded hill, five miles south-west of St. John's, called Branscombe Hill, is nearly 900 feet high, and from its summit there is an extensive panoramic view of the land between the east coast

вЗ

EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND. [CHAP. I.

10

and Conception Bay. The land hereabouts was formerly nearly all covered with wood, consisting principally of various species of fir, spruce, and larch, with some birch. The wood is of a stunted growth, small pole-like trunks growing close together, with branches and twigs thickly interlacing from top to bottom: these, with the old trees falling across each other in all directions, form a matted thicket which is nearly impenetrable. In the immediate neighbourhood of St. John's, and occasionally along the line of the roads leading from it, these woods have been partially cleared, and those spots in which vegetable mould either was found, or could be formed, are turned into fields and gardens. The tops of the hills and ridges, more especially of the South Side Hill, are quite incapable of cultivation, being covered merely with dwarf berry-bearing bushes. Such spots are called "barrens." The hollows and slopes of the hills, and the bottoms of the valleys, contain generally either a pond or a marsh. A marsh is a tract of moss, which is sometimes several feet in depth, like a great sponge, and, of course,

[CHAP. I.

reabouts h wood, es of fir. The 1. pole-like branches top to falling form a netrable. John's. he roads een parch vegeould be gardens. re espeuite inmerely Such hollows bottoms either a tract of feet in course,

CHAP. I.] QUIDDY VIDDY POND.

always wet. The term pond is applied indiscriminately to all pieces of freshwater, whatever may be their size; the grand pond on the western side of the island being fifty miles long. These ponds or lakes are inconceivably numerous, the whole country being dotted over with them. Hundreds of lakes, two or three miles long and upwards might be found, while those of a smaller size are incalculable. Immediately north of St. John's, and close to the town, which is built on the low ridge that separates the harbour from it, is a pretty little lake about a mile long, called Quiddy Viddy Pond. About half way to Portugal Cove the road winds for two miles along the banks of another, called Twenty-mile Pond or Windsor Lake, which with its surrounding woods is a characteristic and striking scene. On approaching Portugal Cove the eye is struck by the serrated and picturesque outline of the hills which run along the coast from it towards Cape St. Francis, and presently delighted with the wild beauty of the little valley or glen at the mouth of which the cove is situated. The road winds with several turns down the side of the valley, into which some small brooks hurry their wa-

EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND. [Ci

[CHAP. I.

S

je

S

e

ters, flashing in the sunshine as they leap over the rocks and down the ledges, through the dark green of the woods. On turning the shoulder of one of the hill-side slopes, the view opens on Conception Bay, with the rocky points of the cove immediately below, and the smooth and fertile-looking Bell Isle in front at about three miles distance, beyond which the high lands of the other side of the bay were seen still streaked and patched on their summits and sides with snow. On returning this day (May 13th) from Portugal Cove, we were overtaken by two or three smart snow-storms.

Logie Bay is a small indentation of the coast, about four miles north of St. John's, and is remarkable for the wildness of its rock and cliff scenery: nothing like a beach is to be found anywhere on this coast, the descent to the sea being always difficult and generally impracticable. In Logie Bay, the thick-bedded dark sandstones and conglomerates stand bold and bare in round-topped hills and precipices, 300 or 400 feet in height, with occasional fissures traversing their jagged cliffs, and the boiling waves of the Atlantic curling round their feet in white eddies, or leaping against

CHAP. 1.] SHIPPING A SERVANT.

[CHAP. I.

ap over he dark noulder v opens oints of smooth t about ne high v were eir suming this we were storms. of the John's. its rock ch is to descent enerally -bedded nd bold ecipices, onal fisand the g round against their sides with huge spouts of foam and spray. Just by Logie Bay is a mineral spring, containing among other things a large proportion of iron in solution. At the period of our visit to this place, the scattered wooden huts were empty and deserted, and the fish flakes and stages out of repair, as the people only reside during the summer season.

I had now been regularly installed as Geological Surveyor, and instructed to examine into the structure of the country, directing my attention in the first instance to the neighbourhood of the principal towns and inhabited places. A strong prejudice existed that coal was to be found near St. It behoved me, therefore, to find John's. out in what direction it could possibly lie. I shall not enter, however, on geological matters in these notes, but refer the reader interested in them to the Report in the Appendix. My first care was to engage a man who was acquainted with the country, as a guide and Accordingly a rough-looking subservant. ject named Kelly, with a strong brogue, presented himself, whom, after some hesitation, I engaged, or in his own language "shipped."

EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND. [CHAP. I.

14

All domestic servants come to be "shipped." Families are applied to to know whether they want to "ship" a housemaid or a cook. Some idea of the rate of wages may be formed by the fact of my having to pay this fellow, a common fisherman, 28*l*.* currency, and his board for the summer, that is, from the 1st of May to the 31st of October. I found afterwards I paid him 6*l*. too much, but in strange places one must always submit to a little imposition by way of paying one's admission fees.

It will perhaps be the best way to afford the reader some idea of the country, and of the customs of the people, to give at some detail a notice of the first two excursions I made from St. John's, the one north to Cape St. Francis, the other south to Petty Harbour and Shoal Bay.

May 20th.—Dr. Stabb of St. John's having agreed to accompany me to Pouche Cove, where he had to visit a patient, we set off after a good breakfast, at seven o'clock. Kelly car-

• 1*l*. sterling is equal to 1*l*. 3s. 4d. currency, the English shilling passing for fourteen pence. The rule is, to turn sterling into currency add a sixth; to turn currency into sterling subtract a seventh.

[CHAP. I.

hipped." her they . Some med by ellow, a and his e 1st of nd after-1 strange little imsion fees. ford the d of the me detail ade from Francis. nd Shoal

's having ne Cove, c off after Kelly car-

the English is, to turn rrency into

CHAP. I.]

TORBAY.

ried a knapsack and hammer-bag, while I was encumbered with a prismatic compass, box sextant, mountain barometer and thermometer, gun and shot-belt. There was a road as far as Torbay, where I had been previously on horseback: the last three miles of this road, however, was merely a track over bare rock, with all its original hollows and ruggedness. On entering Torbay, we passed a small Roman Catholic chapel, which Kelly immediately entered, and where he remained three or four minutes. Torbay is a bold indentation of the coast, offering little or no shelter except in the coves at its head, and none there against an easterly wind. The houses, as is always the case in the small places, are scattered irregularly round the cove, with a straggling path from one to the other. They are built of wood, each by its own inhabitants, rarely painted, and with small windows and doors, the chimney and hearth being of brick. One or two have two stories, and a second room or parlour. As a shore frontage is of the first importance to their fishing operations, every advantage is taken to extend it. Zigzag stairs, supported by short poles resting on points of rock and

EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND. [CHAP. 1.

wooden props, lead in some places down the face of the black slate cliffs, to a wild little landing-place on some sharp jagged ledges; while stages are often carried out on the rocks, affording places on which to spread the fish to dry. The greater part of the road we had come was bordered with thick scrubby wood: in one place, however, this had been burnt some years ago, and the white dry sticks and stakes still remained bare and brittle, crossing each other at all angles and positions, and as bad or worse to penetrate than the growing woods. As it was useless and almost impossible to work traverses or to find sections in such a country, I was driven to the sea-cliff. This, however, was inaccessible, except by a boat. I accordingly wished to engage a boat to take us to Pouche Cove, a distance of six or eight miles. I could not get one with fewer than four hands, and at the rate of 10s. a man, which, thinking extravagant, I refused. We then walked to Middle Cove, another part of the same bay, and there with some difficulty induced two men to pull us alongshore for an hour and back again in an old rickety leaky punt for a dollar and a half, or about 6s. and

CHAP. I.] BURNT WOOD AT FLAT ROCK.

3d. sterling. Returning to Torbay we got a dinner of tea, eggs, and bread and butter, the latter being common ship's biscuit and salt butter, for which we paid 4s. sterling. We then proceeded along the north shore of the bay by a little footpath on the edge of the cliff, and crossing over some high land came down on a small place called Flat Rock. Along the south side of this little cove, the thick red sandstone dips at a slight angle towards the sea, forming a long, smooth, sloping pavement, whence the name of the place. At this point we left the shore, and following a narrow path into the woods, came to a brook crossed by a wooden bridge. This bridge consisted of two or three beams laid across the stream, with a number of poles nailed down across them side by side. Just beyond this, a part of the woods had been recently burnt: the black charred trunks and branches of the trees still standing among the heaps of ashes and charcoal had a striking and singular appearance when viewed for the first time. A path several feet wide had been cut through the woods for three or four miles beyond this, but no other pains had been taken with the road than in a few of the

[CHAP. 1.

own the ld little ledges; he rocks, the fish road we scrubby ad been Iry sticks l brittle, positions, than the nd almost d sections sea-cliff. ept by a a boat to of six or vith fewer s. a man, sed. We er part of difficulty ore for an ety leaky t 6s. and

EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND [CHAP. I.

more boggy places to lay down some sticks and branches of trees, by means of which a dexterous jumper leaping from one to the other might avoid sinking much more than ankle The slippery sticks, however, made a deep. fall so often inevitable, that, to avoid risk to the barometer, I was content to wade how I best could. We passed one or two little ponds of a few hundred yards in diameter, embosomed in wood. At the last of these the scenery was very characteristic of a wild country. The tranquil pond seen at a little distance through the trees, with the thick rank forest circling it on every side so as to exclude every breath of air, old trees covered with tangled bunches of moss and white lichens, fallen through sheer decay and leaning against their neighbours in all positions over the water of the pond, presented a scene which had evidently been unaltered for centuries, and which no act or care of man had ever modified in the least; while from the full margin of the pond a small brook, some five yards wide, leaped with sudden impetuosity, and foaming over a rocky bed at our feet, hurried into the woods, frequently concealed by masses of fallen timber from bank to

[Снар. I.

e sticks which a the other an ankle made a l risk to ow I best onds of a somed in nery was The tranough the ling it on breath of unches of ugh sheer hbours in ond, prebeen unct or care st; while all brook, dden imbed at our ntly conn bank to

Снар. І.]

POUCHE COVE.

bank, utterly lost to sight in about thirty or forty yards, and only to be seen again when, in sailing alongshore, it was found to fling its waters over the broken crags into the sea.

At this point the broad path ended, and a little narrow winding crevice, as it were, cut through the woods, barely sufficient in some places to allow a broad-shouldered man to squeeze between the crowded stems of the polelike trees conducted us to Pouche Cove. It was just dusk when we arrived, and we put up at the first house or cabin we came to. The people received us most hospitably, and gave us tea and bread and butter, but, owing to the recent death of a daughter, could not accommodate us for the night. We then were taken to the house of the schoolmaster, where we were kindly received; but his house being equally unfurnished with room for more than his own family, he took us to a Mrs. Sullivan's, where, it appeared, strangers usually put up. We found here several people assembled round the wood-fire, and shortly joined the circle. After some interchange of talk, in which Kelly bore his part by retailing all the news of St. John's, Dr. S. and I were shown through a door into

EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND. [CHAP. 1.

a small narrow room, in which there were two beds. I, in my ignorance, concluded this was a bed a piece; but Dr. Stabb, more accustomed to the country, immediately asked who slept in the other bed, "Myself and the girl, sir," said the venerable Mrs. Sullivan, to my great astonishment. Accordingly we tumbled into one bed, and after the fatigues of the day were soon fast asleep, and in the morning found the other bed had certainly been slept in, and so concluded the old lady and the girl had effected their entrance and exit quietly in the night without disturbing our slumbers.*

May 21st.—The bake-pot was put in requisition this morning for our service, and a lot

* This was the only instance I met with myself in the country in which what we should consider the rules of decorum were violated. I heard frequent anecdotes, however, of the patriarchal simplicity of the habits of the people a few years ago. It was a common thing, for instance, for the man and his wife to admit the solitary wayfarer to a share of their bed: but it must be recollected that in the severe winter of the country this was probably necessary for the preservation of his life during the night; and where the whole house consisted but of one room, as was often the case, separation was of course impossible. Among a people of simple habits, however, sleeping in one common room is not looked upon as more indecorous than sitting, eating, or drinking in it.

0

a

[CHAP. I.

ere two this was ustomed ho slept irl, sir," ny great led into lay were ound the , and so d effected the night

in requiand a lot

vself in the rules of dees, however, he people a nstance, for syfarer to a that in the eccessary for d where the as often the ong a people non room is ting, eating,

CHAP. I.]

POUCHE COVE.

of little cakes made by our hostess for breakfast, at which she gave us also some fresh herrings. While this was cooking we amused ourselves by watching the spouting of two whales in the offing. I then wished to engage a boat to pull round Cape St. Francis and down to Portugal Cove, but after considerable discussion I could not get one at any but what I thought an extravagant price, 31. being the lowest sum asked. I accordingly took leave of Dr. Stabb, who wished to return to St. John's, and intended to make some excursions on foot, and if possible to force my way to Portugal Cove by that means. As I first wished to see the rocks on the south side of the cove, I struck through the woods in that direction. The distance was about a mile, but it cost an hour's scramble, in the course of which both Kelly and I were wet through, from rain which fell early in the morning and still rested on the leaves, to get near where I wished. I then found a deep narrow "gulch" or crevice in the rocks still separated us from the point of the cove, and that it would cost another hour at least to reach it. A boat was passing beneath, but a look at the smooth

EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND. [CHAP. I.

shelving ledges and black precipitous slate cliffs at once forbade all attempt at a descent. We accordingly returned to Pouche Cove, and passing through the scattered lot of straggling houses, proceeded towards Cape St. Francis. A narrow winding path of three miles through the dense woods conducted us to it. Just as we emerged from the woods on a bare eminence above the little cove behind the cape, called Biskin or Biscavan Cove, a schooner rounded the cape close in-shore, apparently nearly touching the rocks, and then, hauling her wind, kept close along the coast for St. The lively craft, contrasted with the John's. deep silent woods and the wild rocks of the cape, formed a beautiful picture. A few fishermen's huts were scattered about even in this desolate-looking little place. I walked round Cape St. Francis, admiring the boldness of its rock scenery and the magnificent sea-view of the mouth of Conception Bay, but soon found all further progress hopeless. It was not until I actually looked upon this coast with my own eyes that I could fully appreciate or even understand the difficulty, if not the absolute impossibility, of traversing it. It is truly an iron-

S

n

r

S

C

sı d

Cd

to

su

he

or

W

re

be

 $\mathbf{22}$

CHAP. I.

s slate lescent. ve, and ggling Francis. through Just as are emine cape, schooner parently hauling for St. with the s of the w fisherh in this d round ess of its a-view of on found not until with my e or even olute iman iron-

CHAP. I.] CAPE ST. FRANCIS.

bound coast. It is not only lofty, and frequently so precipitous as to be nearly perpendicular or even sometimes overhanging, but so broken by frequent indentations and precipitous crevices and ravines, as to afford no regular edge or summit along which to walk. Meanwhile to the very verge of the rocks, and wherever there was a possibility of a sufficient thickness of moss supporting itself, the compact array of stunted fir-trees crowded themselves, as if resolved to bar all thoughts of a passage. I now began to understand the quiet smile of ridicule with which the people met my proposition to walk across from Pouche Cove or Cape St. Francis to Portugal Cove, and the decided refusal they gave to be partakers in such an extraordinary undertaking as it evidently appeared to them. I could not before conceive what possible obstacle there could be to render a journey of only six or eight miles such a mighty matter; and was astounded to hear it related as rather a doubtful fact, that one or two men had sometimes done it in the winter when the snow had got hard-frozen and rendered the ponds and marshes capable of bearing their weight, and thus enabled them

EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND. [CHAP. I.

to avoid great part of the woods. When I recollected that from the top of Branscombe Hill, five miles to the south-west of St. John's. I could see no termination to these woods, my idea of geologizing the country by the usual method of a series of traverses, certainly received a very rude shock, and I began to perceive that some other plan more adapted to the nature of the country must be adopted. We returned, however, to Biskin Cove, and got some dinner of tea, eggs and herrings; and I then agreed with three men for three dollars, or 15s. currency, equal to 12s. 6d. sterling, to row me back to Pouche Cove, a distance by water of about three or four miles. The rock scenery of these black cliffs, from two to three hundred feet high, with the white surf foaming in their crevices, was certainly very fine, and as we rose and fell with the swell beneath them, assumed a stern grandeur of appearance still higher than their real character. On landing at Pouche Cove I observed what I had not before remarked, namely, slides or ways made of trees and rough planks in one or two crevices of the cliffs, and found they were for dragging up the boats and skiffs whenever an

r

p

0

o t]

tl

ir

W

sp K

th

gı

be th

an

an mi

in

[CHAP. I.

n I rebe Hill, hn's, I ds. my e usual inly reto pered to the We rerot some I I then s, or 15s. row me water of scenery hundred r in their nd as we them, asance still h landing had not ays made two crewere for enever an

HUNGRY GRASS.

CHAP. I.]

easterly gale set in, as they were then no longer safe at anchor: some of these slides were forty or fifty feet high, and very steep. As soon as we left the boat the men went up into the village, and Kelly said they would spend all the money in rum before they went home. We set out for Torbay by the same road we traversed yesterday, Kelly's tongue running on in spite of the difficulties of the path: among other things he said, speaking of the recent establishments of schools in the outports, "What a fine thing it is, sir, to have them schoolmasthers erected in every part of . the country !" Nothing remarkable happened in our return, except that I felt absolutely faint with hunger before we reached Flat Rock, in spite of the dinner I had eaten at the Cape. Kelly's solution of this phenomenon was, that there was a kind of grass they called hungry grass, and whoever passed over it immediately became so faint for want of food, that unless they could shortly obtain it they would drop and perish by the way. On this account it was an established rule never to go even a few miles into the country without a cake of bread in the pocket, at least. I fancied the cause of VOL. I.

EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND. [CHAP. I.

my hunger was, that my English stomach, having been accustomed to beef and ale, disdained to be satisfied with tea and fish in whatever quantity supplied, especially with an appetite sharpened by keen air and exercise. However that may be, I attacked the first house I came to, where we luckily got a quart of milk, which, with some bread and butter, carried us to Torbay. Here we put up at a larger house than common, where I got a little salt mutton, and a decent bed and bedroom with a parlour attached, signs, I suppose, of our approach to the capital. I had nearly given up smoking, but this evening felt a sudden desire for tobacco. I accordingly procured an old pipe and some strong negro-head tobacco, and certainly found by its use a great relief from the fatigue and over-excitement of travelling, and took care afterwards never to be without it, especially where there was a probability of short I paid here a dollar and a half for commons. our supper and bed, and returned the next morning to St. John's to breakfast.

0

n

r

st

01

th

fo

w

W

an

ho

he

ve

the

nai

clu

Th

cei

roc

May 23rd.—About three in the afternoon I set out for Petty Harbour, intending to visit a place about five miles beyond it where

[CHAP. I.

omach. ale. disn whatan apexercise. st house of milk, arried us er house mutton, a parlour proach to ip smoklesire for old pipe and cerfrom the ling, and ut it, espev of short a half for the next

afternoon ending to l it where

CHAP. I.] PETTY HARBOUR.

there was reported to be a copper-mine that had been worked in the last century. For the first three or four miles there was a good road, but we then turned off by a narrow path over the ridge of the South Side Hill. The summit of this is a broad bare moorland, consisting partly of morass or small skirts of wood, partly of naked sheets of level rock or of round hummocks and knobs, and small abrupt ridges of rock rising up here and there along "the strike" of the beds. There are several ponds or small lakes scattered about it : one or two of these are connected by narrow passages, and form most picturesque sheets of water; and when the eye stretches across them over the well-defined boundary of the hill just beyond, and sees far away in the distance the blue horizon of the sea, few scenes that I have beheld are more wild and striking. After traversing this moorland, we came suddenly on the verge of its seaward slope; and there in a narrow ravine between dark precipices lay the cluster of white houses called Petty Harbour. The houses surround a small creek, which receives a howling torrent that hurries over the rocks of a desolate valley just behind, and they

27

c 2

EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND. [CHAP. I.

seem so secluded and shut out from the world, and the people too seemed so well off and contented, that I was much interested with the place altogether. There was a small inn also, where I got very decent quarters.

May 24th.—At six A.M. I started in a fouroared punt* for Shoal Bay, about five miles down the coast. The morning was cool, but beautiful, with a light air off-shore; and the bare lofty precipices of hard red sandstone. which here form the coast, produced magnificent cliff scenery. There was of course a swell, as we were on the margin of the wide Atlantic, and the manner in which we effected a landing was by rowing on the crest of a wave into a crevice just wide enough to admit the boat, and which shortly turned round at right angles behind a broad mass of rock. forming thus a snug shelter for our little craft. After some search we found the place where the mine had formerly been, and where some iron staples and bolts still remained in the rocks. There was, however, no appearance of a shaft, nor could I find anything which could lead me to guess as to the size or importance

in

SO

n

h

st

ca th

* Punt is the term usually given to a small row-boat.

[CHAP. I.

world, nd convith the nn also,

a fourve miles cool, but and the andstone. ed magof course the wide e effected crest of a gh to adhed round s of rock, ittle craft. ace where here some ed in the earance of hich could mportance row-boat.

CHAP. I.]

JIGGING-CODFISH.

of the vein. Some pieces of vein stuff, apparently old refuse, lay about, containing small patches and strings of ore, which proved to be grey sulphuret of copper. After a delay of an hour or two the wind gradually rose, and, seeming inclined to shift towards the east, warned us to be off, which warning it was lucky we obeyed, as the sea was rising, and by the time we returned to Petty Harbour it was blowing pretty strong. On our return we saw many fishing-boats, and passed one that was anchored under a headland, jigging cod-A jigger is a plummet of lead, with two fish. or three hooks stuck at the bottom, projecting on every side, and quite bare. This is let down by the line to the proper depth, and then a man, taking a hitch of the line in his hand, jerks it smartly in, the full length of his arm, then lets it down slowly and jerks it in again. The fish are attracted by seeing something moving in the water, and every now and then one is caught by one of the hooks. As soon as the man feels he has struck one, he hauls in upon the line, taking care to keep it tight till he heaves the fish into the boat. In this way several were caught

EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND. [CHAP. I.

while we were in sight by the two men in the fishing-boat, and they tossed us three or four fine fish as we went by, at the request of the owner of our punt. Returning to Petty Harbour, I walked back to St. John's by the way I had come yesterday.

May 29th.-I was at Portugal Cove, and at eight A.M. started in a punt with four men to visit Bell Isle. It was rather a cloudy morning, but clear when we set off. After a row of about three miles we landed on the beach. which juts out under the cliff for about a quarter of a mile in length and a hundred vards in breadth. Found the island to consist of black shale, with interstratified beds of grey gritstone, very different from the hard slates of the mainland opposite. Except at the beach, the whole island is bounded by perpendicular cliffs, at one point nearly 300 feet high. As I stood on the verge of this highest point, small streaks of thick fog began to steal along the surface of the water beneath, and eventually covered it from sight, except here and there, where a transient opening showed a patch of grey water dotted with flakes of foam. Returning to the boat, we went south-

a

h

[CHAP. I.

in the or four t of the ty Harthe way

, and at men to y morna row of e beach, about a hundred to consist s of grey rd slates t at the by per-300 feet is highest n to steal eath, and cept here g showed flakes of ent south-

CHAP. I.]

THE BELL ROCK.

about and made the circuit of the island. which is about five miles long and nearly three broad. Near the south-east extremity is a very pretty little place called Lants Cove, in a small indentation of the cliff, this and the beach being nearly, if not quite, the only points at which it is possible to land. Both these points contain several houses and inhabitants. On the south-west side of the island we passed between it and the Bell, as it is called, a perpendicular rock about an acre in extent, whose flat top is level with the adjacent land, being more than 100 feet above the water: a narrow strait of about twenty yards across admits of the passage of a boat in calm weather. Having passed through this, we had to row up the west side of the island against a headwind and swell and thick driving fog. There was still, however, a fine scene, to one unaccustomed to the sight, in the dim looming through the fog of each precipitous headland as they successively appeared, frowning nakedly above us as we passed beneath their feet, and then seeming to wrap themselves in cloud again as we laboured slowly onwards. The chill, however, of the fog, and the rolling of our

EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND.

CHAP. I.

little boat in the swell, gradually produced a state of body very unfavourable to the appreciation of the picturesque, that of incipient seasickness, and I was heartily glad when we again landed at Portugal Cove. Here the sun was shining brilliantly, and I thought the day had changed remarkably, but on looking back was surprised to find Bell Isle invisible, and that the whole of the bay was enveloped in deuse white fog rolling in before a north-east wind, while the hills and the land around us were basking in the sunshine without a cloud or a mist.

I heard this evening that they had found coal at Harbour Grace, and that the little packet-boat which plies across the bay had brought specimens of it, which had been taken to St. John's. Accordingly, the next day I hurried across in the packet to Harbour Grace, expecting to find twenty or thirty men digging away at the outcrop of some bed of coal. On inquiry, however, no one seemed to know anything about it, till I was taken to a blacksmith's shop, who said he had got coal from the banks of a lake called Lady Pond, which he had used in his forge and found it answer

[CHAP. 1.

oduced appreent seanen we the sun the day ng back ole, and oped in orth-east ound us a cloud

d found he little bay had en taken at day I ar Grace, digging bal. On to know a blackoal from d, which t answer

CHAP. I.] REPORTS OF A COAL-FIELD.

admirably. A lad accordingly undertook to show me the place, and, the affair getting wind, I proceeded, under a strong escort of twenty or thirty people, in search of the coal. At the back of the town I came upon a ridge of hard clay slate, thick bedded, with imperfect cleavage, which rather shook my belief in the neighbourhood of a coal-field; but as in a new country there might be new facts, I did not despair, and thought that at least a bed or a nest of anthracite must exist. After pushing through the woods for some distance, we came to the margin of a lake a mile long, with a perfectly flat shore, and without an inch of rock exposed, and my conductors began dabbling in the water till they picked up some little brown pieces of stuff like a light cinder, about half the size of an alderman's thumb, and which they strenuously persisted was coal. One young fellow, however, said that sleighing parties often made fires on the ice near this spot in the winter, which confirmed me in the belief of their being cinders. However, I took some pieces away with me, and afterwards, on drying and testing them, found them to be

c 3

EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND. [CHAP. I.

pieces of a light spongy variety of bog-iron ore. So ended all my hopes of a Harbour Grace coal-field, but still so strong and so general was the belief of coal existing in the neighbourhood, that I thought there must be some ground at least for it, and therefore determined to explore with sufficient diligence to decide the question. But how was I to explore? To go hunting through the woods and traversing the marshes was an idle waste of time, and I found that in the approaching fishing season it would be impossible to hire boats: I therefore came to the determination. at my return to St. John's, to report to the governor, with a request to be furnished with a small coasting-vessel, in order to examine the cliffs in detail. To return, however, to Harbour Grace. It is a pretty-looking little town, consisting of one long straggling street along the north side of the inlet or harbour, the houses being mostly painted white, and standing on a narrow flat with a rocky ridge just behind them. Its population is about 3000. It has altogether a more English and neat appearance than most places in New-

Снар. І.]

SPANIARD'S BAY.

foundland. It contains, moreover, a very decent inn, which at this time even St. John's was destitute of.

May 31st.—Walked across to Spaniard's Bay. The first three miles there was a good road, but for the remainder of the distance, or about three more, it was merely marked out. From the summit of the ridge, between Harbour Grace and Spaniard's Bay, the view highly picturesque. The foreground was consisted of rocky eminences covered with wood, with lakes of water in their hollows, beyond which the eye looked over a succession of land and water formed by the inlets of Spaniard's Bay, Bay Roberts, and Port de Grave, and the narrow craggy necks of land between them, with the Cats Cove Hills, and the other highlands about the head of Conception Bay, in the distance. Spaniard's Bay contains but a few houses, but, as a gentleman resided there who was a fellow-voyager with me on my passage out, I stayed and spent the day with him. I found everywhere the same hard useless sort of slate rock as about Harbour Grace.

June 1st.—Returned early in the morning

Снар. 1.

g-iron arbour nd so in the ust be erefore ligence to exwoods e waste oaching to hire ination, to the ed with examine ever, to ng little ng street harbour, ite, and ky ridge is about clish and in New-

EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND. [CHAP. I.

to Harbour Grace, and got on board the little sailing-packet to return to Portugal Cove. As there was a fine north-west wind blowing, I thought it needless to key in stock for a voyage of only sixteen miles, but I soon found my mistake. We had hardly got well out into the bay before we were becalmed, and <u>du</u>ally drifted alongshore by the current; and, after a tedious passage of nineteen hours, only landed in Portugal Cove at half-past four the next morning. Had it not been for the kindness of two gentlemen going to St. John's, who were better provided than myself, I should have had but a very indifferent time of it.

[CHAP. I.

e little ve. As ving, I voyage nd my nt into dut; and, irs, only four the he kind-John's, nyself, I ent time

CHAP. II.]

THE BEAUFORT.

CHAPTER II.

Engage the Beaufort — Visit to Harbour Grace, Cupid's Cove, Brigus, the Cat's Cove Hills, Holyrood Butterpots, and Kelly's Island — Visit to Carbonear, Bacalao Island — Ice Islands off Trinity Harbour—Visit to Trinity, Kandom Sound, Come-by-Chance, Chapel Arm, New Harbour, Heart's Content—Return to St. John's.

THE Legislature of Newfoundland had originally voted 350*l*. towards the geological survey of the island. In consequence, however, of my report to the governor, they increased the grant this year to 600*l*., in order that I might procure a coasting-vessel with which to survey the shore in detail from point to point. After some trouble I engaged a small ketch, called the Beaufort, about thirty-seven tons burthen, belonging to a man named Gaden, who was to go himself as master. He was besides to get a good four-oared punt, four men, and a boy, and to victual himself and crew. For this I engaged to pay 55*l*. per month. I had then to furnish the cabin, which, for the size of the

EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND. [CHAP. II.

vessel, was large and convenient, (as I could stand upright under the skylight, and had room for a chair, a stove, and a small fixed table,) lay in stores for my own provision, as well as a stock of everything I could possibly stand in need of. All these preparations being completed, she was ready for sea on June 15th, when I slept on board.

June 16th.—At five in the morning I was awoke by a noise on deck, which I found to proceed from one of the sailors being brought on board drunk, having after some search been caught by Gaden in the streets. It was eight o'clock before we were fairly under weigh, and stood alongshore to the northward before a light air, so light indeed that it was evening before we floated round Cape St. Francis, and entered Conception Bay. At ten P.M. there was a red gleam of sunset fading in the west, with a fine arch of aurora and flickering streamers over it, while above was a young moon and all the host of stars. The shores of the bay were visible on either hand, the bold coast between Cape St. Francis and Portugal Cove standing in dark relief against the clear star-studded sky.

CHAP. II.

could ad had l fixed sion, as ossibly s being ae 15th,

I was ound to brought search It was under rthward t it was ape St. ay. At sunset aurora e above of stars. n either Francis k relief

HARBOUR GRACE.

CHAP. 11.

June 17th.—It was quite calm during the night, but at six A.M. a breeze sprung up from the south-west, against which we beat up for Portugal Cove. As we neared Bell Isle we saw a fleet of fishing-vessels rounding it and anchoring under its lee, and presently a smart squall of wind and rain struck us, against which we made but little headway. After trying for some time in vain to get near enough to Bell Isle to anchor, we bore up for Harbour Grace. The packet-boat put out of Harbour Grace as we went in, but after a little while she too ran back to the shelter of the harbour.

In the afternoon I visited a land-slip, in company with Mr. St. John. In June, 1838, near a place called the Grove, on the north side of the harbour, after a great flood of rain, a large piece of the cliff, consisting chiefly of rubbish and boulders, slid forward over the smooth slate rock, which in that place dips towards the water. The subsidence was about 100 yards long, 40 yards across, and the cliff about 140 feet high. It consisted now of three ridges or shelves of land on which the trees

EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND. [CHAP. 1].

stood undisturbed, with broken ground between them. These shelf-strips rose one above another, the uppermost having subsided about fifteen feet, with a chasm thirty feet wide between it and the main land.

The next day I saw some pretty good slaterock, on the banks of the brook at the head of the harbour, but found the woods very difficult to penetrate. On returning by the shore of the Lady Pond, I saw something struggling in a shallow place, and fired at it. A large eel showed himself, and I gave him the other barrel and stunned him. One of the men went and got hold of him, but loosed him again for fear he should be bitten; he then stooped down and seized him with his teeth and both hands, and threw him into the air, but instead of sending him landwards heaved him farther into the water, so we lost him. He was very large, and I was annoved at the man's stupidity.

June 19th.—Weighed anchor at seven A.M., and, in going out, visited the small island (one of a cluster of rocks) at the mouth of the harbour, on which stands a lighthouse, perched р 2

tł

oi li

CHAP. 11.

nd bese one g subthirty

l slatehead of lifficult hore of gling in arge eel e other he men ed him he then is teeth the air, heaved ost him. d at the

en A.M., and (one the harperched CHAP. II.]

PORT DE GRAVE.

on the brink of a precipice, consisting of a square wooden house with a square dovecotelooking top for a lantern. It is, however, an effective and useful light. The island is only accessible in tolerably smooth weather, by ladders up the face of its landward cliff. It consists of one large block of as fine roofingslate as ever I saw in my life. Then went in the boat to Bryant's Cove, a picturesque little spot, being the mouth of a small valley that here comes out on the sea, and then proceeded to Spaniard's Bay, whence I sent the boat to tow the vessel in, it having fallen quite calm.

June 20th.—This day visited Bay Roberts and Port de Grave, finding nothing but slate rock, similar to that which I had seen before. Both these places are inhabited. Indeed the western (or as it is called in Newfoundland the northern) shore of Conception Bay is the most populous part of the island, having upwards of 20,000 people scattered along it, with ministers of the churches of England and Rome and of the Weşleyans, several medical men, and most of the comforts and conveniences of civilized life.

2 EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND. [CHAP. II.

June 21st.—As I wanted to get a little into the interior, to see if there were any boundary to this abominable slate rock in that direction. we took the boat this morning to what is called the northern gut of Port de Grave. Here a brook empties itself into the sea, having run for about three miles through a narrow pond, or "cosh," as my men called it. We hauled the boat up the shallow bed of the brook for a few yards into deeper water, and then rowed up the lake. I then struck off, with two men and the theodolite and barometer, to the top of a hill on the north side, called Sunday's Hill, whose height I found to be about 500 feet. From its top I could see nothing in the interior but woods and marshes, dotted with ponds, with several rugged eminences rising in different directions. I proceeded two or three miles farther, over some marshes, till I found the labour as useless as it was great, since no rock showed itself. We then had a hard tug through some thick woods down to the bed of the brook, where I found still the same slate rock, and after much toil and difficulty we got back to the head of the "cosh." Here we met Gaden.

[CHAP. II.

tle into undary rection. what is Grave. having narrow it. We of the ter, and uck off, nd barorth side, found to ould see marshes. red emi-I prover some less as it elf. We ne thick k, where nd after k to the : Gaden,

CHAP. II.]

CUPID'S COVE.

who had caught three or four dozen of trout up the brook, but on coming to the boat found some urchins from the neighbouring houses had stolen all our bread and butter. So we sailed down the cosh to a house, where we procured some potatoes, and with these and the trout we had caught made a comfortable dinner. As the evening fell I took the rod and line, and just where the brook ran into the sea I caught several dozen very nice trout and salmon-peel. They seemed both to prefer the brackish water at the mouth of the brook, and the largest were caught farthest into the salt water. We then returned to our vessel, which was anchored about a mile down the bay, in a place called Cupid's Cove, but which, contrary to what might have been expected, was a wild desolate little spot with no attractions whatever. I was much struck with the beauty of the little valley we had visited, its sheltered situation between two bold rocky ridges, and the apparent superiority of the soil on the banks of the pond and brook, as evinced by the larger size of the trees, and the little patches of natural grass or turf which were to be seen. Of the latter the generality of the

EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND. [CHAP. 1].

country is quite destitute. The seafaring propensities and employments of the people, however, had hindered all but just the seaward end of this pretty little place from being taken possession of.*

June 22nd, 23rd, 24th.-Proceeded to Brigus, and examined its neighbourhood. This is a rather considerable settlement, with a population of about 2000. It is a wild rocky little place; but about three miles inland from it is a fertile valley, through which runs a brook forming occasional ponds, and emptying itself into the sea on the southern side of Port de Grave. It is accordingly called the Southern Gut. In this valley lies a farm called "the Golds,"[†] which was farmed by Mr. Cousins. The road to it lay through a pretty wood, in which the timber was greatly superior to that commonly to be found. There was

* Since the new road has been completed, it has several times struck me that it would be worth while to clear away the bar at the mouth of the brook, convert the "cosh" into a small harbour, and cultivate its banks on a larger scale. I know few places that would exceed it in beauty as a summer residence, and for feeding cattle it would certainly be excellently adapted.

t So called from a yellow flower which grows abundantiv on the banks of some of the brooks.

li

[CHAP. II.

e, howeaward g taken

to Bril. This with a d rocky and from runs a mptying of Port e Southm called by Mr. a pretty superior here was

has several clear away cosh " into ger scale. I y as a sumcertainly be

rows abun-

CHAP. II.]

THE GOLDS.

some good grass-land in the flat, but much of it had been destroyed by spring floods, as the best portion of it was scarcely above the level of the brook. About two feet below the surface was a stratum, three or four inches thick, of concretionary bog-iron ore, that had as usual been mistaken for coal. The water, becoming impregnated with iron, probably from the decomposition of sulphuret of iron in the slate rocks, deposits it when it becomes stagnant in the flats, and it forms concretionary nodules in the clay or mud. Much of this flat land was covered with raspberry-bushes; and Mr. Cousins informed me that, after a fire in the woods, the first thing that covers the ground is a luxuriant growth of raspberry-bushes, which are gradually succeeded by a thick wood of birch, although previous to the fire nothing but fir and spruce may have been seen for miles. I believe that at the time of my visit this farm was not a profitable speculation, although the only one in the neighbourhood.

June 25th.—I set out this morning in the boat, accompanied by Mr. Green of Brigus, to visit the Cat's Cove Hills at the head of Collier's Bay. After exploring the coast, we arrived

EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND. [CHAP. II.

at the head of the bay at 12 o'clock, and struck off into the woods by a narrow path. We took three men to carry the theodolite and hammer-bag, but I did not intrust the barometer to any one, and accordingly carried it myself. In about a quarter of a mile we came upon a newly-cut road that was intended to run from Brigus round the head of the bay towards St. John's. We travelled along this for about half a mile, but found it a mere morass, and were obliged to jump from one root of a tree to another the greatest part of the way. We then struck off across a marsh for the hills, and in a short time entered a wood. Here we found the bed of a little torrent, which enabled us to proceed some distance with tolerable ease, but when that ended we were obliged to force our way through the dense thicket, sometimes climbing over, sometime crawling beneath, masses of fallen rotten wood, stumbling over slippery moss-covered boulders, slipping on the wet roots of trees, sliding down steep banks of rock, or tearing the clothes off our backs by dragging ourselves through the matted twigs and branches of the trees. All this while the thermometer

n

h

W

st

a

it

fr

of

sh

ar

CHAP. II.

, and path. te and e baroried it e came ided to he bay ng this ere mone root of the marsh tered a ttle tordistance ded we ugh the r, somen rotten -covered of trees, tearing ing ourbranches mometer

CHAP. II.]

CAT'S COVE HILLS.

stood at 75°, and not a breath of air could find its way to us. The smell of the woods and the turpentine exuding from the trees was as close and stifling as an oven, and the mosquitoes began to attack us by hundreds. They did not, indeed, annoy me so much, but Mr. Green's face and neck were soon running down with blood. When, after toiling in this way to the top of one ridge, we still found a ravine separating us from the hill, we were half inclined to give it up. However, taking " heart of grace," we plunged again into the woods, and after another stiff climb we at length found ourselves on the summit. It cost us altogether more than four hours' hard labour, although the distance was not much more than three miles from the sea-side. The hill consists of three precipitous peaks, one of which seemed nearly inaccessible, but, notwithstanding its rugged and mountainous appearance, the barometrical observations did not give it a greater height than 860 feet. The view from its summit was very beautiful: the whole of Conception Bay, with its islands and varied shores, was spread out before us on one side, and all the centre of the province of Averlon

EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND. [CHAP. 1].

on the other. A tract of comparatively flat country stretched away to the south towards St. Mary's Bay, varied, however, by undulations and occasional eminences, and covered with woods and lakes, one of the latter of which seemed of considerable size. To the east of this tract ran a line of round hummocky hills, consisting apparently of bare rock: to the west was a ridge of hills seemingly of greater height, but of a rounder and smoother character. After spending an hour on the summit, and taking a round of angles on the principal objects, we descended. In going down we took care to choose a better route than the one we came up by, and, after traversing a small marsh or two, came upon a wood-path, by following which we got out to the sea-side in half the time it took us to go in. These woodpaths are frequent in the woods near the seashore: they are formed in the winter by the people coming to cut fire-wood, when they penetrate in various directions in search of the best timber, and haul it out over the snow and ice, having previously cut a crevice through the thicket wide enough to admit its passage. In the summer, when the snow is off the

la

m

be

HAP. II.

y flat wards ndulaovered which east of v hills, to the greater characummit, rincipal wn we the one a small by fol--side in e woodthe sear by the en they h of the now and through passage. off the

CHAP. II.]

A WINTER-PATH.

ground, these paths are sufficiently rugged and uneven, as the stumps and roots of the fallen trees still remain; they are, however, a little better than the uncut woods, and serve at least to keep a person in the right direction, by which much time is saved. As they are intended to be traversed only in the winter, however, they invariably cross all the marshes and ponds that lie in the way, and the traveller is constantly stopped by coming suddenly on a large pond, right on the other side of which he sees the continuation of the path, with the pleasing consciousness that the space which would require ten minutes' easy and pleasant walking, were the pond frozen over so as to enable him to cross, will cost him now an hour's hard and provoking labour before he can get round it. It is, moreover, round the edges of the ponds that the trees are most abundant, and the underwood thickest and most impervious. On getting out to the seashore we got some bread and butter and molasses-tea,* at a house or hut hard by, where a

* Common tea, *boiled* in a tea-kettle, with a spoonful of molasses for sweetening, and often drunk, in default of a better cup, out of the tea-kettle lid.

VOL. I.

D

EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND. [CHAP. 1].

family had resided during the winter, and returned to Brigus by ten o'clock.

June 26th and 27th.-Sailed along and examined all the inlets and holes and corners round the head of Conception Bay up to Holyrood, where we anchored in Chapel Cove. The bottom here being light-coloured, we could appreciate the extraordinary clearness and transparency of the water. Although we were close inshore, it was eight or ten fathoms deep; and yet we could see the anchor lying on the bottom, and the whole length of the chain up to the surface. On the rocks nearer shore myriads of green echini completely covered the bottom of the water, except in patches where a kind of coral forming crusts an inch thick, with small round knobs rising from it, was to be seen : this coral belongs to the genus myriapora, and is abundant on all the coasts of Newfoundland. This afternoon I ascended the Butterpots, a remarkable hill immediately on the east side of the inlet of Holyrood. We passed to the foot of the hill through a good deal of oldburnt wood, now all white and brittle. The mosquitoes were troublesome, but we kept them off in some measure by smearing our faces with

CHAP. II. | HOLYROOD BUTTERPOTS.

нар. 11. nd re-

d exaround vrood, ottom reciate arency shore, yet we m, and urface. green of the f coral l round is coral abun-This emarkof the foot of t wood, quitoes off in es with camphorated spirits of wine and sweet oil, a bottle of which I had provided for the purpose. We unfortunately attacked the face of the hill instead of working round it; accordingly we had a very hard climb, and in one place I slipped between two blocks of rock, and found on arriving at the summit that I had thus squeezed and broken the tube of the baro-The summit is flat, with a precipitous meter. face towards the west, and a more gradual but still rapid slope to the east : it probably attains the height of 1000 feet above the sea. The view from it was much the same as from the Cats Cove Hills.

I did not see much of the people in this part of Conception Bay, as I was too eagerly engaged in hunting rocks, but as far as I can recollect they seemed to be comfortable and contented, and their gardens and small fields to be superior in fertility to those in the neighbourhood of Harbour Grace or St. John's.

June 28th.—From Holyrood to Portugal Cove, visiting Kelly's Island, Killegrews, and Little Bell Isle on the way. From Holyrood to Topsail there is a low tract of flat land, about a mile wide, full of ponds, and having a

D 2

EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND. [CHAP. II.

beach of large pebbles; and on the south-east side of each of the three islands opposite to it is a similar beach of a triangular shape, the apex running out to sea and pointing to the opposite shore. It looks as if a current swept past the islands from the north-west, deposited a heap of pebbles in the slack-water under the lee of each, and piled up the rest of the pebbles on the opposite shore. As a proof that there is such a current, several things (and I believe the body of a boy) which were lost from a vessel that was wrecked in 1840 near Pouche Cove were picked up in Holyrood, having doubled Cape St. Francis and travelled to the very head of Conception Bay. When I landed on Kelly's Island I found several workmen getting stone for the projected Catholic Cathedral in St. John's. The island is composed of shale, with bands of hard fine-grained gritstone: a thick bed of the latter comes out in the cliff on the south-east side of the island, and, as the shale beneath and above it decomposes, it falls down and forms a considerable talus of fragments at the cliff's foot. One or two schooners were carrying away these loose blocks for building-stones.

CHAP. 11.]

CARBONEAR.

A few days before I visited them they had found at one place, beneath the roots of an old tree that grew over the rubbish, an old iron gun. It was a nine-pounder, very rusty, having no date or other mark than S. C. on each end of the trunnions, with a figure between the letters that might either have been a fleur-de-lys or an arrow-head. I was told afterwards that in some former wars the island had been used as a place of refuge for the inhabitants of the neighbourhood.

June 29th.—Having sent across to St. John's for letters, &c., we sailed in the evening to Carbonear, with a strong breeze of wind and a storm of rain.

June 30th.—To-day, being Sunday, the men, who were all Catholics, went to chapel, and I spent the day with some gentlemen who kindly invited me ashore. The land on which Carbonear stands is not so level as that of Harbour Grace, the town therefore is more irregular; and as several mercantile establishments which formerly existed there have been broken up, it has, in parts, a forlorn and deserted air. Nothing, indeed, looks so wretched as large unpainted and deserted wooden buildings.

IAP. II.

-east to it e, the o the swept depowater e rest As a everal which ked in up in rancis eption found pro-The f hard of the th-east th and forms e cliff's rrying stones.

EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND. [CHAP. II.

I spent the evening at Mr. Packe's, who has a very pleasant place on the top of the ridge at the back of the town, where he has reduced several acres to a very good state of cultivation. I went over his farm, and saw oats just coming up, as well as a good crop of Timothy-grass, and some fine young cabbageplants springing. These were reckoned early, and it was said in about three weeks the grass and the cabbages would be ready for cutting. Mr. Packe told me, however, that his farm, with all the advantage of his having many men who could employ their spare time on it, instead of yielding a profit, cost him nearly 100% per annum to keep it in order.* I was much charmed with the aspect of a wild little valley behind the house, partly filled with wood and a succession of small lakes or ponds, through which a brook ran off towards the sea, while the view from the front of the house commanded the mouth of Carbonear Harbour and its island, and a large part of Conception

S

0

a

р іг Іі

a

W

* I hope Mr. Packe will excuse my introducing him in propria persona, and reporting private conversation, but such facts as the above are valuable to show the nature of the country.

HAP, II.

who f the e has te of l saw rop of bageearly, grass tting. farm, many on it, nearly I was little with bonds. s the house arbour eption

him in ion, but ature of

NORTHERN BAY.

CHAP. II.]

Bay, with Cape St. Francis and its lofty shores.

July 1st.—Sailed with a light air along shore to the northward, landing at several points as I went along. About Western and Northern Bays were several spots where the slate rocks were covered with red ochre. There appeared to be an oxide of iron dispersed through the rock, which, when it was exposed on the surface, formed a peroxide. It was traditionally reported that the Red Indians used these places formerly, to collect the red ochre which they smeared over their persons, clothes, and instruments.

In the evening it came on to blow fresh from the south-west, and we anchored in Northern Bay. Went ashore, and caught some trout near a pretty water-fall at the head of the bay. A considerable number of houses were scattered round the little bay, as about all the small coves along this shore. The people were busied about their gardens, as also in spreading the cod-fish to dry on the flakes. In both places they seemed to be greatly annoyed and troubled by the mosquitoes. The women, although the weather was very hot,

EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND. [CHAP. II.

kept large shawls spread over their head and shoulders, and pinned tight round their faces, to protect them from the attacks of the flies while engaged in their work. They were very civil and hospitable, inviting me into their houses, and offering spruce-beer or tea. It was here I first noticed the swarms of small fish called capelin. These fish (Salmo arcticus) are rather longer than the hand, with slight elegantly-shaped bodies, greenish backs, and silver bellies, some of their scales being tinged with red. They are very beautiful little things, and in June and the early part of July crowd into the shores in countless myriads to deposit their spawn. The head of this little bay had a small strip of sand beach, on which was a slight rolling surf, and every heave of the wave, as it broke on the sand, strewed its margin with hundreds of capelin, leaping and glancing in the sun till the next wave swept them off and deposited a fresh multitude. The clear green of the water, margined with a belt of white foam full of these elegant creatures, glittering in the sunshine, formed altogether a most beautiful and interesting sight. We picked up a bucketful

CHAP. II.]

BACALAO ISLAND.

of them as we were going off, for supper and breakfast, as, when fresh, they are most delicate eating.

July 2nd.—Continued our voyage along shore into Bay Verde, or, as the people call it, Bay of Herbs. This latter name is singularly inappropriate, as it is a wild desert place, composed entirely of bare red gritstone, like that on the coast near St. John's. Bacalao Island, which is close by, being almost inaccessible, is the favourite resort of thousands of sea-birds, which kept flying about us as we lay becalmed for some time in the bay. At noon a fresh breeze from the south-west sprang up, and we sailed through the passage between the island and the main, and shaped our course for Trinity Harbour, on the north-west side of Trinity Bay. As we neared Trinity it got very cold, the thermometer sinking to 48°, and we found three small islands of ice a mile or two to the northward of us.

July 3rd and 4th.—Trinity Harbour is one of the finest in the world, having three spacious basins entirely landlocked. A lofty rocky promontory rises in the centre of the harbour,

D 3

CHAP. II.

l and faces, flies were e into or tea. small o arcl, with backs, being autiful part of ss myead of beach, l every e sand. apelin, e next fresh water, full of e sunful and cketful

58

on the lower parts of which stand the houses composing the town, scattered about with the usual irregularity. There is a good church and churchyard, and several large and excellent houses with pleasant gardens. The storehouses and vards of several mercantile establishments are also on a very extensive scale, though the trade of the place is, I believe, declining, and is greatly fallen off from its former state. The harbour is surrounded by rocky hills forming precipitous cliffs toward the sea, and no road has as yet been formed from it, though one to Catalina has been surveyed. The rocks about it are slate, with beds of greywacke conglomerate. The population of Trinity and the neighbourhood is about 3000.

July 5th.—Sailed in the afternoon. The three islands of ice off the mouth of the harbour were covered by gulls and other seabirds, that were continually wheeling round them. Several whales were spouting round us in the coves, close alongshore, apparently pursuing the capelin. Many of these whales were of large size, as was apparent from the HAP. II.

ouses h the urch ez.celstoreestascale. lieve. m its ed by oward ormed n surwith popubod is

The harr searound round rently whales m the

THE THRASHER.

CHAP. II.]

huge tails they heaved into the air. Put into a little harbour on the south side of Buonaventure Head.

July 6th.-After towing the vessel out of the harbour, went away in the boat to examine several islands. Saw a thrasher at a distance. This is a large cetaceous animal, that lies on the surface of the water, which he continually lashes with what shows at a distance like a great tail, but is, I believe, a large pectoral fin or paddle. He makes the sea foam around him, and is said to be then attacking the My men told me that, while the whale. thrasher thus persecuted the whale from above, the sword-fish was thrusting him with his jagged weapon from below, and one of them assured me he had seen the whale rise to the surface and heard him roar with pain at a distance of three miles. As this was Kelly's story, however, I consider the authority very doubtful, to say the least of it. After rowing all day in a burning sun among the islands,*

• From one island I saw two well-defined stripes of wind blowing down the bay, each about one mile broad, with three stripes of perfectly calm water alongside of them, giving a very peculiar banded effect to the aspect of the

we saw the vessel still becalmed under the land in the evening, and were obliged to pull back to her, when a light breeze sprang up, and we made for Smith's Sound.

60

July 7th.—Thick fog early in the morning, at the mouth of the sound, but as we proceeded we found it not to extend far inland. and we drew gradually out of it into a blazing sunshine. The sail up the sound was very beautiful. It is a fine river-like arm of the sea, from one to two miles wide, with lofty, and in places precipitous, rocky banks, covered with wood. We occupied the whole day in examining both sides of the sound, and anchored in the evening at the head of it in a still lake-like bay, at the north-west corner of Random Island. There is here a shallow bar connecting Random Island with the main land, which is only passable at high water. This we carefully examined to find the deepest channel, in order to pass it in the morning. The shore here, both on the island and the main, is low and well wooded. It is com-

0

S

d

n E

si

h

water of the bay. The wind seemed to blow for some time in the same direction within the same narrow limits, but gradually shifted its place and visited other parts of the bay. нар. II.

r the pull ; up,

ning, proland, azing very f the with anks, whole , and t in a her of w bar main vater. epest ning. l the com-

e time s, but he bay. CHAP. II.]

RANDOM SOUND.

posed of the same shale as Bell Isle in Conception Bay, and its soil is of a superior fertility to that of the rest of the country, and timber is consequently better. We saw several seals here, one of which we shot, but it sank before we could get it. Although the nearest shore was full half a mile from our anchorage, we were immediately on our arrival invaded by such hosts of mosquitoes, that, after vainly trying to sleep for some time, we were obliged to fasten down the hatches and skylights, and then make fires of old rags, oakum, and other things, till the vessel was saturated with smoke.

July 8th.—Soon after daylight we tried to tow the vessel over the bar, but found the tide did not rise high enough to admit of it. It is only at spring tides, or possibly during strong easterly winds, that there is more than six feet of water, while our vessel, the Beaufort, drew six feet and a half. I accordingly put three days' provisions into the boat, and, taking two men with me, set off, appointing to meet the Beaufort in Hickman's Harbour, on the south side of Random Island. A fine mass of peaked hills some miles to the west sent down some

spurs to the coast opposite Random Island, which I found to consist of signite. The character of the scenery of Random Sound, on the south side of the island, is much the same as that of Smith's Sound on the north, wild and beautiful, and conveying, from its stillness and silence, the feeling of utter solitude and seclusion. As we rowed alongshore we came to a small rocky point of red sienite, on which stood two large masses of rock in a singular position, the one resting on the other, on the smallest possible base, apparently, on which such a block could be balanced. On this point was a she-otter with her young ones fishing, one of the latter of which I shot, as they were of good size. Here we dined, and presently after came to a large bay or recess to our right, from the head of which a well-marked valley ran away to the south. Here we got a breeze, and putting up our lug-sail we rattled away down to Hickman's Harbour. Landing at one place opposite this to make some observations on some rocks that caught my eye, as soon as we got under the lull of the woods we were assailed by mosquitoes. I endeavoured for some time to disregard them, but was at

CHAP. II.] A NIGHT ON THE BEACH.

last fairly maddened and driven off. Thev came in such clouds before my face that I could not see to write in my note-book, while the eager voracity with which they fastened on every inch of skin exposed was absolutely terrifying, so that at last we made a simultaneous bolt into the boat and shoved off into the breeze, which soon swept them away. We then sailed to the mouth of the sound, but, seeing nothing of the Beaufort, returned and put into a little cove on the south side just as it was growing dark. We were guided by the sound of falling water to a little brook that leaped over the rocks into the sea. Here we hauled our boat ashore, and established ourselves on a little margin of shingle and broken rocks between the woods and the water. We gathered some old trunks of trees, and cut down some fresh ones; fired some loose brown paper out of the gun to light a match, and made a fire, piled on some logs, and as soon as they were fairly alight covered them with wet moss to make a smoke to drive away the mosquitoes, in which we succeeded pretty well. The next thing was to boil the kettle, into which we put a handful of tea and about

AP. II.

land, chaa the ne as l and s and secluto a which gular on the which point shing, v were sently to our harked got a rattled anding obsereye, as ods we voured was at

two table-spoonfuls of molasses, to make the usual beverage of the country. In the mean while a lot of green boughs had been cut to interpose between the rocks and our persons as a bed, and wood and moss piled for the night to keep up the fire and the smoke. The men had brought a spare stay-sail as a covering, and I had a cloak. We were obliged to tie our heads up in handkerchiefs, and put on gloves, to keep our hands and faces from being bitten; and, thus defended, hushed by the falling water of the brook and the splash of the sea three yards from our feet, we went to Although awoke once or twice by sleep. heavy rain hissing on the fire, I passed this my first night in the open air in tolerable comfort, but found in the morning a few sore places in my ribs from some sharp corners of rock coming against them.

July 9th.—On awaking found it high tide and the water nearly up to the fire. The tides on the coast of Newfoundland are generally so small, the water never rising or falling more than six feet, and the coast is usually so bold, the water being deep close in-shore, that they are practically disregarded, the only dif-

CHAP. II.] CLEARNESS OF THE WATER.

ference between high and low water being, that a few feet more or less of perpendicular rock are covered with water. The first thing this morning I bathed, but, though the weather had now been very warm for more than a month, I found the water, even in this sheltered nook, bitterly cold, so that one plunge from a rock quite sufficed me. We derived, however, one advantage from it, as, while I was dressing, my attention was caught by something moving on the bottom twelve or fifteen feet below me, and I soon found it to be covered with lobsters. One or two of these, by means of a pointed stick, we managed to capture. The singular clearness of the water is most remarkable; when the surface is still, the echini, shell-fish, and cretiniæ clinging to the rocks, crabs and lobsters crawling on the bottom, fish, medusæ, and myriads of seacreatures floating in its depths, were as clearly visible to a depth of thirty or forty feet as in Just as breakfast was ready it air itself. began to rain again and the mosquitoes began to thicken, so we pushed off in the boat, and, hoisting an oar upon two forked sticks, we

threw the sail over it, and thus made a kind of

IAP. 11.

the nean ut to ns as night men ering, to tie ut on being y the of the ent to ice by ed this lerable w sore ners of

gh tide The genefalling ally so re, that aly dif-

canopy, under which we breakfasted, without, at the same time, being breakfasted upon more than was endurable. It afterwards cleared, and we rowed about the shores of the sound. examining the cliffs and waiting for the Beaufort to make her appearance. The cliffs hereabout are of a dark-red thick-bedded hard sandstone or gritstone, and often rise from a considerable depth below the water to a perpendicular height of 300 or 400 feet above it, sometimes without a single break and scarcely a jutting ledge. Sometimes, however, a narrow talus is formed by huge fallen fragments, and on the older parts of these soil has gradually accumulated and trees have Among the roots of these trees numegrown. rous otters have formed their burrows. These are called "otter rubs," from the smooth and beaten path leading to them, or from the polished stems and roots of the trees, against which the animals apparently rub themselves. As I sat in one of these places among the gnarled stems and twisted roots of some old trees, and looked up to the huge wall of rock on one side, and down on the other through the leaves to the boat waiting at the foot of the

b

n

fc

c

ir

Is

SI

a

a) fi

F

sł

u

CHAP. II.

thout. more eared. sound. r the The edded n rise ater to 0 feet ak and howfallen se soil have nume-These h and m the against selves. ng the ne old ock on gh the of the

CHAP. II.] RANDOM WESTERN HEAD.

rocks below, it seemed so admirable a subject for a picture, that I more than ever regretted my want of artistic skill to do justice to the scene. As we sailed out of the sound a small whale or grampus rose near us, and I fired a charge of swan-shot into him, but he seemed to treat the salute with the utmost indifference. The seaward view was entirely obscured by fog, which every now and then drove in clouds up the sound, but soon dispersed over the land. After landing in a small cove and boiling our lobsters for dinner, we observed some fishingboats at Random Western Head, about four miles off, and pulled across to them to know whether they had seen anything of the Beaufort. While we were talking to them the fog cleared off, and we saw her in the offing, standing in towards us. We then visited Long Island and Heart's Ease, where there is a small settlement of several houses, and got aboard about dusk. After dark it fell calm, and about ten o'clock I went in the boat to find the entrance to a small harbour called Fox Harbour. It was very dark under the shadow of the cliffs, but we eventually hit upon the spot, and found a channel between

h

h

tl

r

n

h

d

a

rc

CE

h

ha

a

in

fif

ur

la

sti

ro

an

two small islands. In returning I could not but be struck with the beauty of the scene. There was not a cloud in the heavens, and, though no moon was visible, the sky was flaming with stars; the planet Jupiter, more especially, cast quite a glare upon the still water, which being nearly landlocked might have been taken for a lake, but for the gentle heave of the ground-swell, which told of the stirring of the "ocean old." The air was mild, and yet the northern lights were glimmering with brilliant flickering streamers over the last faint reflection of sunset, while every dash of the oars and surge of the boat made the sea flame with phosphorescent sparks and eddying flashes Around this brilliant scene dark of light. headlands lay in stern yet calm repose. All was still and silent except the booming sound of a whale as he rose to blow, making a noise occasionally like the puff of a steam-engine, and the plash of the waters as they closed again round his descending carcase.

July 10th.—It having been quite calm all night, the vessel did not come to an anchor in Fox Harbour before six in the morning, and about eight I set off in the boat with four

CHAP. 11.

d not scene. . and. v was more water, have heave tirring d. and g with st faint of the flame flashes e dark e. All sound a noise engine, closed

alm all chor in ig, and ih four

CHAP. II.] SOUTH-WEST ARM.

hands to examine the inlet called the southwestern arm. We pulled along under the northern shore, visiting a fine-looking harbour called by the people Jones's Harbour. At the mouth of this a breeze sprang up, and we hoisted sail and ran alongshore. The men. having been up all night, fell asleep on the thwarts; and as I lay back between the yokeropes of the rudder, I could see no other moving thing on the broad sound, and the hills and woods around us, but our little boat dancing from wave to wave. Just before we arrived at the head of the arm dark clouds rose in the west, and a heavy thunder-storm came on. We caught sight, however, of a heap of chips of wood in a cove on the right hand, which the men said was probably near a winter-house or tilt. We made for it accordingly, and found a path leading in about fifty yards to a very good "tilt."

This was formed of trunks of trees placed upright on the ground close together, with larger ones for the corner-pieces, and a good strong gable-end roof formed of a frame of roughly squared beams. The corner pieces and beams were nailed together, and the rest

b

p

o: fi

p

"

rc T

th

W

on

W

ot

I fie

an

Af dis

at

int

driven in tight with wooden wedges wherever The interstices of those trunks necessary. which formed the walls were filled up with moss tightly rammed between them; and the roof was covered by long strips or sheets of birch bark, laid tile-like over one another, and kept down by poles or sticks laid across them. A space for a door is left in the middle of one side, and a fire-place is built up with stones and boulders against one end, over which is a space in the roof, and some boards nailed together for a chimney. In this way a tolerable room, twelve or fourteen feet by eight or ten, is formed, sufficiently compact to keep out wind and weather to a certain extent. A "crew" of men, say six or eight, go off in the beginning of winter with a stock of provisions to the head of some of the largest and least-frequented arms of the sea they can find, where the wood has been least cut up, and, building one of these huts, employ themselves either in cutting fire-wood to be hauled out over the snow and ice, or in making oars or staves, building punts, fishing-boats, or even in some cases small schooners. The house which we had thus lighted upon had been

HAP. II.

rever runks moss e roof birch kept a. A of one stones ich is nailed way a eet by pact to extent. off in of prost and n find, b, and, nselves led out oars or or even house d been CHAP. II.]

A WINTER TILT.

occupied by a party the preceding winter building a large boat, which was the reason of the pile of chips we saw on the shore, being the spot where they had built and launched The roof had suffered a little, some of her. the bark or "rinds" having been stripped off by the winds. This, however, was soon repaired; and in a quarter of an hour we had one end of the roof water-proof, and a blazing fire lighted. We then brought the sails and provisions out of the boat, and one of the men "rinding" a few more trees, we completed the roof, and commenced cooking our dinners. The storm not seeming likely to abate when the evening closed in, we determined to stay where we were for the night. Accordingly, one man took a gun to look for a duck, one went to moor the boat more securely, and the others made new hafts for their hatchets, while I copied out my geological notes from the field-book. Just before dark it cleared a little. and I followed a narrow path into the woods. After running through thick woods for some distance, the path came out on a small marsh at the foot of a rocky hill, and then divided into two or three. I pursued each of these

a

t

a

d

0

p

A

W

fo

th

be

isl

it

ro

be

Fı

 \mathbf{th}

co

ob

ar

to the end, and found them gradually to be lost in the wood, usually ending at the stump of some tree larger than common, and which the men had gone farther in than usual to procure. Beyond these points all was dense and tangled thicket, now dripping wet. On returning I found the boat's sail dried and rigged into a hammock for me, and the spare stay-sail hung round the fire at the back of a heap of green boughs, forming a bed and curtain for the men. We then supped on the remains of the dinner, had a glass of grog and a pipe, and spun yarns round the fire till we all fell asleep. These men were all natives of Newfoundland, but completely Irish, with all the brogue, and some of the wit and humour, of the latter country. They apparently delighted in tales of the marvellous, which, if they did not recollect, they were not slow to invent. They were also evidently imbued with superstition. One of them, named Dick, was going down to the boat soon after dark for something he thought he had forgotten, when another began a story of some man living in a lonely place hearing a knock at his door one night, which, on opening, he found to proceed from

CHAP. II.]

P. 11.

be

the

and

sual

ense

On

and

spare

of a

and

n the

g and

ill we

ves of

ith all

bur, of

ighted

ey did

nvent.

super-

going

ething

nother

lonely

night,

d from

A GHOST STORY.

a headless visitor that walked in and usurped his place at the fire. Dick, who had got to the door, instantly returned and sat down, and, on my asking him why he did not go, said, "Oh, by God, sir, I'm feared to go after that !" and to my great astonishment I found that, though an active daring boatman, he was absolutely afraid to venture fifty yards in the dark, and that his fear did not seem unnatural or ridiculous to the rest.

July 11th. - Breakfast at daylight, and pulled back again along the opposite shore. A flat valley ran from our resting-place northwards into Random Sound, and had apparently formed at one time a water connection between the two inlets, and thus rendered the land between the sound and the south-west arm an island. I had not time, however, to examine it more in detail, as my business was to hunt rocks, and if possible find coal, which I had been told had been seen about Random Island. From the middle of the south-west arm I saw the same picturesque group of hills in the country to the west which I had previously observed from the sound. The head of the arm was also composed of sienite, as was the VOL. I.

case with the sound, from which, to the sea, the rocks were all clay slate, quartzose grits, and dark slate rock. On going alongshore we came to a small sand beach, on which were the fresh tracks of a bear and a fox. They both led into the wood, where it was hopeless to attempt to find them. A little below, a very large bird, a kind of brown eagle, with whitish head and yellow claws, flew out of a cliff, and flapped lazily along from cliff to cliff before us. I sent a ball after him out of my double barrel, but without success. At one spot where we landed was a small brook with some meadow-land covered with grass, and spotted with blue iris and other flowers. Contrasted with the general covering of dank moss, it looked quite delightful. It did not, however, run far, as 200 or 300 yards from the shore the usual close wood and moss covered the ground. Reached Fox Harbour at three P.M., took in some water, got up the anchor, and stood into the bay, bound farther up for the Bay of Bull's Arm.

F

to

p

n

p

W

2

b

to

w til

A

se

fis

in of

July 12th.—We beat up all day against a south wind, and in the evening anchored in Mosquito Cove, Bay of Bull's Arm. The aspect

BAY OF BULL'S ARM.

CHAP. II.]

of the coast and country was still the same, namely, wild and rugged, with scattered and stunted wood. Beyond Fox Harbour and Heart's Ease there were no inhabitants.

July 13th. - Not very well this morning, but about 11 o'clock set off with all hands in the boat for the head of the arm. Here we landed near a little brook, where I left the skipper Gaden and one man fishing, while I with the rest started across for the head of Placentia Bay, determined among other things to procure some fresh meat of some sort if possible. The neck of land here which connects the province of Avalon with the main part of the island is not more than three miles wide, and, where we crossed, not above 150 or 200 feet above the level of the sea. There had been some talk of cutting a canal through it to connect Trinity and Placentia Bays, and were those places the seat of a large mercantile population it would no doubt be effected. At present, however, the only purpose it could serve would be the occasional passage of a fishing-boat from one bay to the other, according to the season and the relative abundance of fish. There are still the marks of a path,

P. II.

sea, rits. hore vere hey eless w, a with of a cliff my t one with and wers. dank not, from moss rbour p the rther

nst a

ed in

aspect

Е 2

along which, according to the tradition of the country, the French, when they were in possession of Placentia, used to haul their boats from one bay to the other on the dry land. The slope towards Trinity Bay is gradual, and over marshy ground, on which we found a great many tracks of deer apparently freshly made. On the Placentia side the descent is more abrupt and rocky, and through a thick wood. On the barren, at the top of the ridge, I shot a brace of ptarmigan without respect to the season of the year, a consideration but little attended to by a hungry man in a wild country. At the foot of the woody descent we came to a pretty brook with a depth of water of two or three feet and a rapid current. Its bed was, however, rocky, and it shortly spread out among the pebbles and sands at the head of the bay we had come out upon, and which went by the name of "Come-by-Chance." Walking about a mile down the brook we came to a lone house at its mouth, with six or eight cows feeding on the meadows, formed by the washings of the brook and the sea. It is only in such situations, where the alluvium of a brook has had room to spread itself out, that

Сна nat fou the cen salr the up; cau valu was by resu wou of co and com bala no f deer tea, and mer high the fresh feast

CHAP, II.]

ł

a

y

S

k

э,

:0

ıt

ld

ve

er

ts

ad

ad

 \mathbf{ch}

e."

we

or

by

is

of

lat

COME-BY-CHANCE.

natural grass is to be seen in the country. We found only the woman and children at home, the man having gone down to fish about Pla-They managed the cows and the centia. salmon-nets. One of the latter was placed at the mouth of the brook, and one a mile or two up; and they told me that last year they had caught six tierce of salmon. These varied in value from 3l. to 6l. currency, so that the wife was enabled to get 201. or 301. every summer by her own exertions, independent of the results of her husband's cod-fishing, which would probably be as much more. As they, of course, paid no rent for either house or land, and had wood for firing and boat-building at command, they were well off. To counterbalance these advantages, however, they had no fresh meat unless when the man shot a deer, and had to fetch their bread, salt pork, tea, sugar, and every article both of clothing and food, from Placentia, or some other distant merchant's store, where they necessarily paid high prices from the want of competition and the nature of the trade. We got here some fresh milk and butter, and four salmon, and feasted accordingly, and while we were strolling

about, the husband's boat came "goosewinged" up the bay before a fresh breeze, and my men got what they enjoyed more than even salmon and milk, namely, some news from Placentia and St. John's. I also heard of two gentlemen of St. John's who lost their way in the country a few days before, in attempting to walk across this neck of land a few miles farther down, where it is about nine miles wide. They were out in the woods two days and a night in dreadful weather, with no shelter and but little food, and with difficulty got back to the place they had started from. They were accustomed to traverse the country, and not easily disheartened, so some notion of the difficulty of penetrating it may be gained from this fact. We walked back to our boat in the evening, and found Gaden and the other man had caught no fish, but had been nearly eaten alive by the mosquitoes.

July 14th.—A dense fog this morning, which about ten cleared off, and I took the men and the boat, intending to visit a lofty hill called in Bullock's chart "Centre Hill," between Bay of Bull's Arm and Deer Harbour. In climbing up the first bank I found myself very

IAP. II.

ooseand than news ieard their e, in and a nine s two th no culty from. ntry, ion of ained boat d the been

which n and led in n Bay climbvery Снар. 11.]

CENTRE HILL.

weak and unwell, with sickness and frequent giddiness, and it was with much difficulty I toiled over the marshes and through the tangled woods to some craggy and broken rocks with dark pools of water at the foot of the hill, which looked very steep and inaccessible. After taking a little biscuit soaked in whisky and water, however, and a strong pull at the "creature itself," I managed to reach the top.

The view was very extensive, commanding the greater part of Trinity and Placentia Bays, the high lands about the Bays of Bonavista and Fortune, and a wide tract of the The interior consisted almost eninterior. tirely of marshes, dotted with ponds and patches and strips of wood; a few ridges showed either bare rock or white lichens to contrast with the velvety green and yellow of the marshes, which are altogether deep wet moss. Although the sea was within five miles of us on one side, and the woods and hollows obscured them at a greater distance than eight or ten miles on the other, I counted no fewer than 152 ponds from the summit of this hill, none less than twenty or thirty yards across, and some of them half a mile or a mile

80

wide. The height of the hill was probably 1000 or 1200 feet. We could trace several well-beaten deer-paths traversing the marshes, but saw no deer. I found, however, a bag of buck-shot on the top of the hill, which is used as a look-out by persons who come to shoot deer in the fall of the year. In descending we found a kind of track that led us out by a shorter way than the one we came, and close by the shore we found a kind of rude sledge that had apparently been hastily constructed to haul out the body of some deer over the On returning to the vessel found mysnow. self very unwell, but was cured by a boiled ptarmigan and a basin of the broth. An English stomach accustomed to fresh meat is really very inconvenient to a traveller. In this hot weather I had loathed the salt pork and beef, and lived principally on tea and biscuit. Our water, too, lately had been got principally from brooks that flowed from the marshes, and was full of vegetable matter; so that, from bad living and the incessant attacks of the mosquitoes, I was nearly driven into a fever, and could neither eat, sleep, nor think.

July 15th.-Felt much better. Weighed

CHAP. II.]

CHANCE COVE.

anchor and sailed along the shore towards Tickle Harbour. In the middle of the day we got becalmed, and a thick fog came on, and presently after a deluge of rain, that soon poured through the skylight and ceiling into my cabin, wetting everything except my bed. In the evening it began to blow, and we met some fishing-boats that told us Tickle Harbour was a bad place to lie in, and one boat piloted us into a small cove called Chance Cove a mile or two astern, where we arrived just as it got dark, through a narrow and rocky entrance. The man directed us, if it came on to blow from the north-east, to get a line ashore and haul behind a small rocky headland. After a glass of grog he sailed away into the mist to go home, there being some houses in a small cove a mile or two off towards Tickle Harbour.

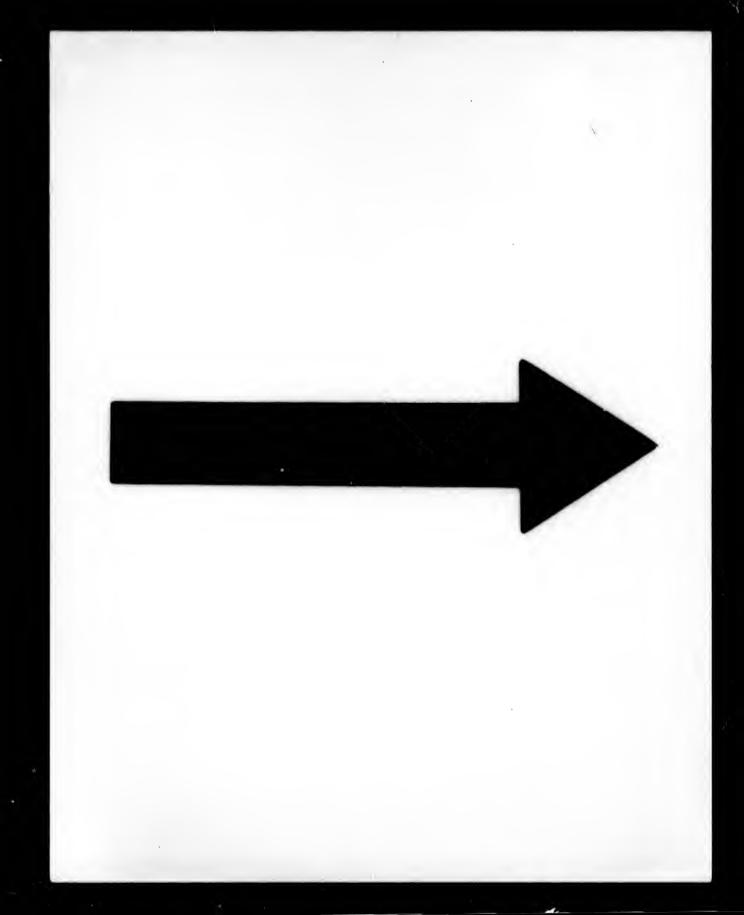
July 16th. — Fine morning and pleasant breeze, and we sailed alongshore round Tickle Harbour Point into Collier's Bay, landing occasionally of course to examine the rocks. In the evening one of the men, in getting water from a brook, had his eyes nearly closed up from the swelling caused by the bites of a very

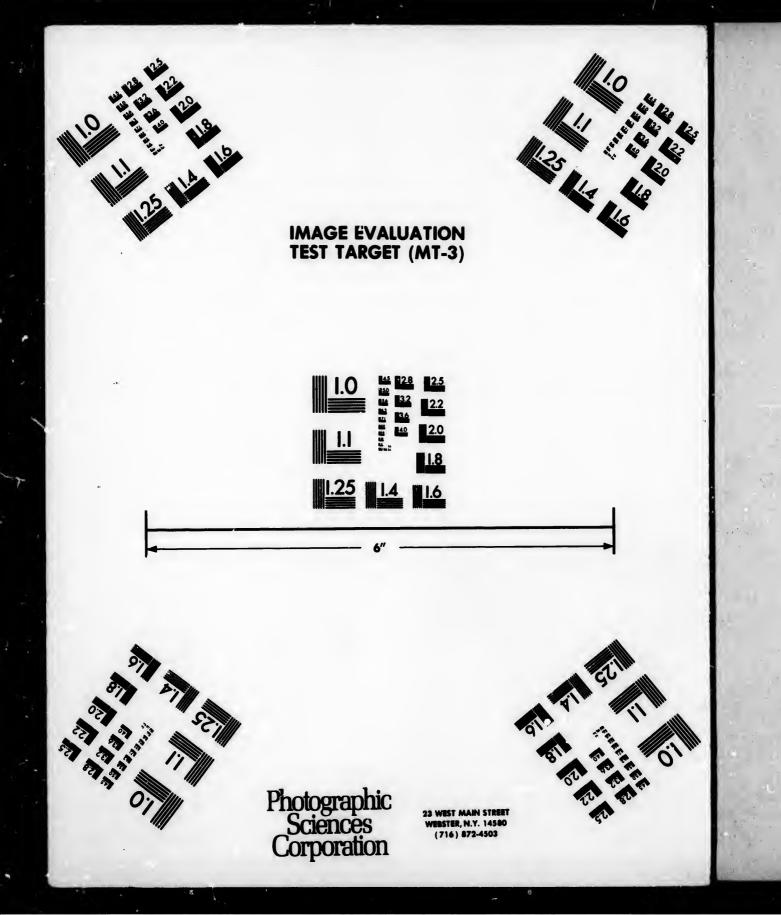
ЕЗ

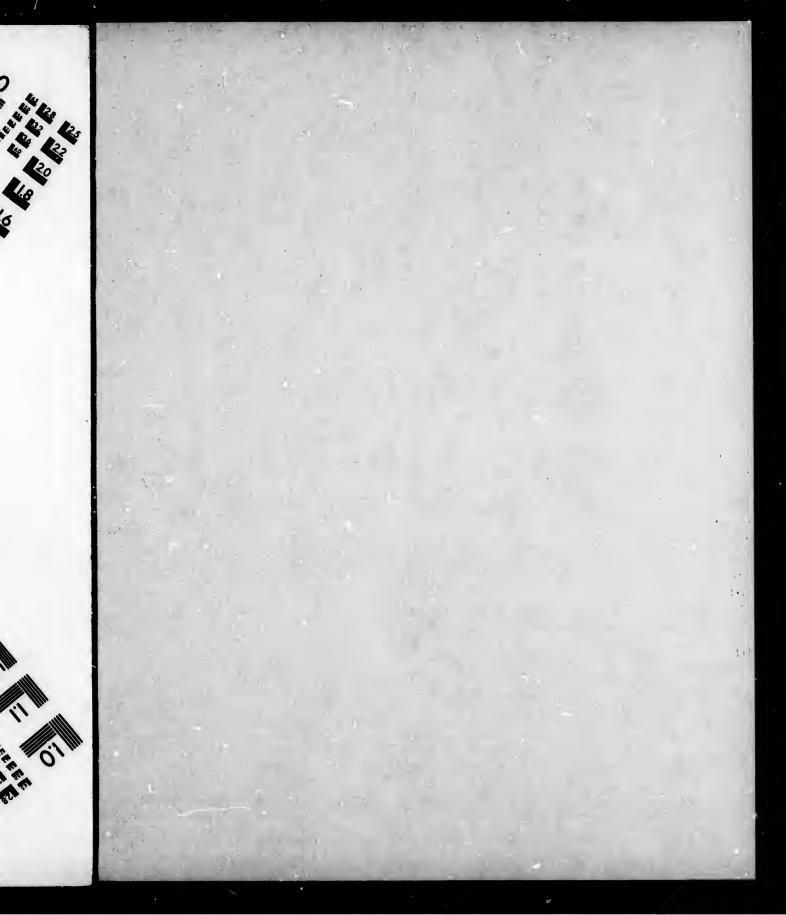
AP. 11.

ably eral hes. g of used hoot g we by a close edge cted the myoiled An at is this and cuit. pally and bad mosand

ghed







minute insect called a sandfly, one of the three kinds of biting flies which go under the general denomination of mosquitoes.

July 17th.-Saw some large flocks of ducks, which were, I believe, the eider-duck, but could not get a shot at them. We then visited Chapel Arm, round which are some very picturesque peaked hills, clothed with dense wood. Here, at a place called Norman's Cove, we saw a small schooner on the stocks, and found several houses. Sailing by a fishingboat we asked them for some fish, when they threw half a dozen fine cod aboard, without thinking of asking a recompence, or staying to receive our thanks. Coasted along and anchored in the evening in New Harbour, a shoal place and difficult of entrance. We here found several merchants' stores, and a considerable population, the beginning of a road, and a bridge over the brook. I also got some provincial newpapers, and found a paragraph in one in which I was said to have discovered copper, gypsum, coal, limestone, and, if I recollect rightly, silver, the account, I suppose, of some imaginative fisherman.

July 18th.-Mr. Nieuhook of New Harbour

CHAP. II.] HEART'S CONTENT.

treated us very kindly, and piloted us out in the morning, and we sailed with a light breeze down to Heart's Content, along a low shore of bright red and grey slate. The wood along this was finer than ordinary, and the land apparently more fertile, grass growing occasionally, and in one place, called Green Bay, I observed some white clover in flower. Heart's Content is a fine spacious harbour, nearly circular, and excellently sheltered from all winds. The land about is high, and from this place the coast is lofty and bold for some miles towards the north.

The Reverend Mr. Hamilton came on board and invited me ashore. He has charge of all the eastern shore of Trinity Bay, as Mr. Bullock had of Trinity Harbour and the western shore, Heart's Content and Trinity being the respective head-quarters. Almost all the eastern shore of Trinity Bay is inhabited, and Heart's Content contains two or three mercantile establishments or agencies, and a considerable number of houses. The different places alongshore are only connected by miserable winding wood-paths or narrow boggy tracks over the roots of trees, but Heart's Content has

ree ne-

ks.

uld ted icnse ve, ind nghey out ing and r, a ere nsiad. me aph red reose,

our

.83

a road, surveyed to Carbonear, which is completed except three or four miles of "barren" in the middle, and all the brooks are bridged over. There is also a road marked out from New Harbour to Spaniard's Bay, and wooden bridges constructed over the brooks.

We were detained a day at Heart's Content by bad weather and a gale from the north-east, and on July 20th sailed again alongshore, calling at New and Old Perlican, Hants Harbour, &c., down to Baccalieu Island. Here the wind fell to a calm, and it was morning of July 21st before I landed at Quiddy Viddy, and walked up to St.-John's, after a trip of five weeks.

CHAPTER III.

Leave St. John's for the Westward—Lamelin—St. Pierre— Langley—Bay of Islands—Excursion up the Humber River—Calm in the Gulf of St. Lawrence—Catch of Cod-fish.

Not having succeeded in finding coal or other valuable mineral matters in this part of the island, the governor thought it would be advisable for me to go round to the western side to examine the coal which was creditably reported to exist there, and then work my way home along the south shore of the island, and examine the other side of Avalon in the fall of the year. We accordingly attempted to replace one of our men who was dismissed for drunkenness by some one who had a knowledge of the coast we were going to visit, and who could act as a pilot: we were, however, unsuccessful in this, but engaged an active young fellow to serve as a common sailor, and

en " ged rom

tent east, iore, Har-Here g of ddy, five

determined to trust for guidance to our charts and our own skill or good fortune.

July 30th. — After the usual trouble in getting all our things on board which attends the departure of both large and small vessels, we sailed to-day at twelve o'clock with a fine breeze from N.W., and passed Cape Broyle about six in the evening, with the wind lulling.

July 31st. – Having had a light wind all night, we only doubled Cape Race early this morning, and about eight found ourselves off Trepassée, among a fleet of fishing-boats, all at anchor, and all catching fish with great expedition, and sailed with a light easterly wind for the island of St. Pierre. The practice I had already had did not prevent my feeling very sea-sick, which compelled me to take refuge in my berth the greater part of the time.

August 1st.—Dense fog, so that we could not see twenty yards in any direction. About eleven o'clock it cleared off a little and we saw land ahead, which turned out to be Laun Islands, the current having drifted us in-shore more than we expected. The fog closed in again, and the wind freshened, with

. III. arts

in ends sels, fine oyle vind

this elves s, all t exwind had very ge in

bout d we o be d us fog with LAMELIN.

Case. III.]

a short jerking sea, and about six in the evening we found ourselves close in under some high barren shore, round which the fog was whirling in white eddies, utterly obscuring its features. We concluded this to be St. Pierre, but as none of us had ever been there before, we did not venture to try for the harbour, which is narrow and rocky, and so stood off again. Another attempt just before dark was equally unsuccessful, so we stood off for the night on a S.S.E. course, with a fresh breeze from south-west and a rough sea. At midnight, when we calculated we had made fifteen or twenty miles offing, we hove to.

August 2nd.—Stood in for the land again, the fog being as dense as ever. We very shortly came upon a fishing-boat at anchor, and found that the strong current setting into Fortune Bay, between St. Pierre and the main, had drifted us close in-shore upon a highly dangerous coast, whence reefs of rock extend in some places three miles out to sea. Luckily we had hit a spot where we had the little harbour of Lamelin under our lee, and by following the directions of the fishermen, and leaving one rock on the starboard, another on our lar-

88

board hand, and then hauling up to windward, we found ourselves in smooth water, where we anchored. Still the fog was as dense as ever, and what kind of a place we were in we had no notion. We heard, however, frequent voices, and presently, as it began to clear a little, we observed on one side of us a forest of masts looming through the fog, apparently large vessels, but which turned out to be a fleet of fishing-boats waiting to put to sea. Then the dim form of land was seen, and when the fog dissipated we found ourselves in a snug berth enough, behind two islands, with a flat marshy shore on the other side, rising into low barren rocky hills in the interior. We were detained here till the afternoon of August 4th by strong westerly winds, when, growing impatient, I put to sea to try to beat up to St. Pierre. There were a considerable number of houses in Lamelin, but, from the neighbouring country being destitute of wood, most of the inhabitants shift their quarters, when winter comes on, to the shores of Fortune Bay. Two men living here, however, had about fifty head of cattle apiece, which they kept on the adjacent marshes, where a rank grass grew.

CHAP. III.]

LAMELIN.

There was a shallow salt lake at the back of the harbour that filled at the rise of the tide, and was called by the people a Barrasway. This, is a very common term for a shallow marshy inlet or salt lake along the south coast of Newfoundland. It is spelt in the French charts Barachois, and is, I conclude, a Norman word. A Nova Scotian schooner came in while we were at Lamelin, "The Betsy of Halifax." She was loaded with pork, molasses, rum, and shop-goods, the latter designation including all kinds of printed calicoes, cloths, ribbons, gloves, shoes, &c. &c. She traded along the coast, receiving dry fish in exchange, and the owner of her, while talking with me, pointed out a commonlooking fisherman, who, he said, owed him 1001., and whom he immediately proceeded to dun accordingly. I was surprised to find them dealing in so large a way, and trusting any of the tenants of the miserable-looking wooden huts around us to such an amount. The resident merchants complain dreadfully of these floating shopkeepers, whom they consider as interlopers, and who often, by sudden temptation of rum or finery, succeed in getting

P. III.

ard. e we ever, had uent ar a est of ently be a sea. and res in with ising . We ugust wing to St. ber of uring f the vinter Two head h the grew.

90

off a whole cargo of fish that was justly due from the fisherman to his merchant for goods received. The ultimate result of the practice. however, may be good for both parties, as I shall have occasion to observe when speaking of the trade of the country. Meanwhile, the owner of the "Betsy" gave the people of the neighbourhood by no means the best of characters in one respect, as he said one winter he was utterly wrecked on Point des Galles, a few miles to the eastward, and while walking nearly naked on the snow, to try and recover a few articles of clothing which were washed ashore from the wreck, two or three men came down, and made no scruple to pilfer the things before his eyes, and would hardly give them up when demanded.

August 5th. — After buffeting about for nearly thirty hours, we managed to get into St. Pierre outer harbour just before dark. A subordinate officer came on board from the guard-ship (which was only a schooner of four guns) as we stood in, and pointed us out a berth to anchor, and requested to know our business. I gave him my card, and in a short time he returned with the commander of the AP. III.

y due goods ctice. as I aking e, the of the f chavinter lles. a lking ecover ashed came things them

t for t into k. A n the f four out a w our short of the

CHAP, III.]

ST. PIERRE.

guard-ship, who was also captain of the port. He behaved very civilly, and promised to report my arrival to the commandant, and demand permission for me to wait upon him. Next morning, before I was up, a midshipman came on board with the commandant's desire to see me at twelve o'clock, when I accordingly called upon him, and found him a fine intelligent old man, who had formerly been an aidde-camp to Marshal Ney. He was very civil, and invited me to dinner. I learnt here that the Cleopatra, Captain Lushington, the frigate on the Newfoundland station this summer, had sailed the day before we came in, which was a disappointment, as I had hoped to have met with her, and formed an acquaintance with her commander and officers. The islands of St. Pierre, Miquelon, and Langley are the only territorial possessions left to the French in this part of the world. The harbour of St. Pierre consists of an outer road, which is protected by several small islands and rocks from most winds; and an inner harbour, which is smaller, and has a rocky bar that does not allow of the entrance of anything larger than a brig of about 200 tons. On

one side of this inner harbour is the town. consisting of a small narrow street of wooden houses, few of which are two stories high, and several lanes of still smaller dimensions. The house of the commandant is tolerably sized, built of wood, with several comfortable apartments, having a small esplanade, and a couple of guns, and a sentry or two before it. By treaty the French are not allowed to erect fortifications, nor to have more than fifty soldiers on the island at one time. There were two or three large brigs and a ship in the outer roads, and several smaller vessels, brigs and schooners, in the inner harbour, besides many large boats. They have very strict regulations in the port. No English boats or vessels are allowed to come in having fish on board, on penalty of being seized; and no Englishman is allowed to bring English goods and manufactures, or to set up a shop in the town. There is, however, an American warehouse belonging to Atherton and Thorne, which seemed to be doing a large business. The island of St. Pierre consists principally of signite, and is barren in the extreme. It is a mass of rocky hummocks, the hills rising to a height of 400

LANGLEY ISLAND.

CHAP. III.]

AP. 111.

own. oden and The sized. partouple By t forldiers wo or roads. oners. boats. port. red to lty of lowed es, or howhg to to be f St. nd is rocky f 400 or 500 feet directly from the water. The hollows and flatter parts consist of marshes and ponds; and there is not a tree in the island six feet high, a few scrubby fir-bushes alone contriving to exist. It is with the greatest difficulty that they have scraped together near the town sufficient soil to grow a few cabbages. They are entirely dependent on Langley and Miquelon, or the English settlements in Placentia and Fortune Bay, for firewood. Vegetables they get from Boston or Prince Edward's Island.

August 7th.—Set out early this morning in the boat for Langley, where the commandant told me he had a summer residence of a much pleasanter character than the one at St. Pierre, the country about being finer and more fertile. Just north of St. Pierre, and separated from it by a narrow channel is a small lofty island called Colombier. Its resemblance to a dove-cote arises from the multitudes of puffins which breed there, and are always flying about it in great flocks. From this we had a hard pull of three miles in the teeth of the wind to the cliffs of Langley, as the Little Miquelon of the French is called by the Eng-

lish. We then rowed round Cape Percée, which derives its name from a singular arched rock, and entered a wide bay that lies between Langley and the greater Miquelon. The scenery here was very striking and picturesque, as the high land of Langley sloped down towards the west, covered with rich green moss and skirts of wood, into a dense mass of wood of a finer appearance than usual, and covering some flat land that swept round towards the north, exposing a fine sand beach, and connecting the two islands of Great and Little Miquelon. These islands, not more than sixty or seventy years ago, were quite distinct, and are marked so on all old charts; a considerable channel of two fathoms' depth running between This, however, is now entirely filled them. up, and a long narrow line of sand-hills with a beach on each side occupies its place. Instances have been known, even of late years, of vessels in stress of weather making for this channel, and being wrecked on the sands. On walking out along the western side of this neck of land, we found the remains of three wrecks there then, as the place with a southwest wind is very dangerous, more especially

e

d

CHAP. III.]

LANGLEY BEACH.

in foggy weather. I quite rejoiced in a walk on this sand-beach, the only one I had yet seen about Newfoundland, and indeed the only place I had yet found (except the roads about St. John's) where it was possible to walk at all, as one is accustomed to do, with the head up and the eyes off the ground, and without the constant fear of coming down on the nose. It was quite refreshing to be able to step out, with a fair "toe and heel" step, instead of scrambling among bushes, or floundering in wet marsh. The immediate neighbour of this strip of sand, however, was a large marsh, in which I shot half a dozen snipe as a compensation for its toilsomeness; and some part of it had been drained and was converted into meadows, on which were sheep and cattle. There are still more extensive meadows. I believe, farther north, on the Miguelon side, where enough sheep and cows are fed to supply St. Pierre and the neighbouring population.

The commandant's house is on a gentle elevation on the south side of the bay near a rocky brook, and prettily situated. Close by was a smaller house occupied by two gendarmes, who had care of the premises. One

P. III.

rcée, ched ween The sque, n tomoss wood ering ls the con-Little sixty t, and erable tween filled with a Inars, of, r this . On f this three southecially

of the gendarmes, named Ducroix, was married to a pretty young Irishwoman, whose history was rather remarkable. She had left Ireland with her father and uncle when the cholera was raging in it, and had gone with them to Quebec. On arriving at Quebec they found the cholera was very prevalent there also, and they went on to Montreal, where it was worse. At Montreal both her father and his brother were attacked and died of cholera. and she was left alone in a strange land. She managed to get back to Quebec, and there procured a passage in a vessel going to Ireland, intending to return to her friends; but the vessel was totally wrecked on the beach of Langley one night, and the crew and passengers with great difficulty saved. Here, being very young and quite destitute, she was persuaded to stop and marry the gendarme, who happened to be present, and to have assisted in rescuing her. This was six years ago, and she had now four children. His period of service was nearly out, and he expected to be ordered home the next autumn, when she hoped to be able to visit her friends. They behaved very hospitably to us, and gave

HAP. III.

marwhose ad left n the e with c they there ere it er and holera. . She there reland. ut the ach of bassenbeing s perdarme. ave asvears . His he exutumn, friends. d gave CHAP. III.] LE

LEAVE ST. PIERRE.

us a loaf of bread and a lot of lettuces, no contemptible present to a sea-voyager.

August 8th.—Having profited by our visit to a French port by taking in a sea stock of wine and brandy, we sailed from St. Pierre in the middle of the day with a south-east wind and thick and rainy weather. We could just make out the dim form of Cape Miquelon as we rounded the north end of the island, and then steered away on a west-north-west course into the fog.

August 9th.-Dense fog, with occasional squalls of wind and rain. I experienced a peculiar feeling of loneliness to-day, in looking out from the deck of our little vessel into the heavy fog resting on the dark boiling waves, as we slowly toiled over their crests, or sunk into their hollows, that I do not recollect to have felt before. We seemed so utterly shut out from all the world, so hidden by the dense curtain about us, and our vessel to be such a mere nut-shell on the wide waste of waters, which, as its boundaries were no longer visible, appeared to the imagination more vast than when defined by a sensible horizon; and we passed so many hours and traversed so VOL. I.

many miles without change of any sort, in the same damp fog, over the same dreary water, that the fancy became affected with a kind of awe, very different from the usual excitement of a mere coasting voyage. I do not know whether the rough minds of my companions were affected in the same way, but they were all silent also.

August 10th.-About six this morning, through a slight opening in the fog, we saw the dim outline of land a mile or two on our starboard hand, and accordingly hauled off to the west-south-west. About noon the fog suddenly cleared off, or rather we ran out of it. and found ourselves fairly in the Gulf of St. Lawrence, with Cape Ray about ten miles east-north-east of us, and a bright sun overhead. We then steered north for the Bay of Islands, and at night were off the mouth of St. George's Bay. It was a beautiful evening, with a fine aurora in the northern sky, consisting of a diffused yellow light with brilliant streamers rising in the north-west, the whole dabbled with small black clouds.

August 11th.—Fine morning, with fresh breeze from the south. Kept close in to Cape

RAP. III.

in the water, ind of ement know anions y were

rning, aw the r starto the g sudc of it, of St. miles n overe Bay buth of rening, y, conrilliant whole

fresh o Cape

CHAP. III.]

BAY OF ISLANDS.

St. George, and between it and Red Island. Red Island is composed of horizontal beds of red sandstone, while the cliffs of Cape St. George are a light yellow limestone, chiefly magnesian. We then passed along a low and level shore, being a neck of land running on one side of a large bay, called Port au Port. This was covered with wood. North of the entrance of Port au Port the coast is very bold and lofty for a considerable distance, as far north as Cape St. Gregory at least, the high lands of which were visible as we came to the entrance of the Bay of Islands. We were here entirely in a new country, but the chart showed us two small harbours on the south side of the bay, called York and Lark Harbours, in the former of which we anchored about dusk. We had some difficulty in getting in, as under the high lands round the harbour we were every now and then totally becalmed: then a squall, rushing down some narrow ravine, would suddenly strike us, and hurry us along, "scuppers under," straining the masts and "making everything crack again."

August 12th.—At sailing this morning we kept under the southern shore, passing by

F 2

several low flat islands on our larboard hand, in order to enter the most southern of the three branches into which the bay divides, and which is called Humber Sound. I had been informed that at the head of this was the mouth of the largest and most navigable river in the island : this I was desirous to ascend as far as possible, in order to get some notion of the interior of the country. In entering the sound a lofty ridge of high land rose immediately to the south of us, called the Blow-medown Hills. Its general elevation must, I think, have been upwards of 800 feet. It was bare at top; and in some hollows, just under the top and sheltered from the south and the rays of the sun, some patches of snow twenty or thirty yards across still remained, although the summer hitherto had been very hot. The slope of these hills, and the flat land at their foot, was covered with dense wood. Where we lay last night there was no sign of habitation; accordingly we were yet ignorant whether we should find any people in the neighbourhood, or, if we did, what nation they would belong Just at the mouth of the sound, however, to. we saw a small hut, and made towards it, and AP. III.

hand, f the vides, [had is the river nd as ion of g the mmev-meıst, I t was under d the wenty nough The their re we ation; er we hood, elong vever, t, and CHAP. III.]

HUMBER SOUND.

presently a human figure presented itself in a tattered dress, but it was not till we heard him speak that we knew whether he was an Indian or a European. We found him to be an Englishman, who, with his wife and two children, had just settled there, and that this hut was his summer residence, his winter house being back in the woods. He was in a poor state at present, but expected to be more comfortable in a few years. He informed us that there were four other small settlements in the sound; accordingly in sailing up we saw on each side a patch or two of garden-ground, with a house attached, forming a green opening among the black woods. The sound is about a mile wide and seventeen long, and the scenery, as might be expected from the rocky and woody character of its shores, is of a pleasing kind. We anchored at the head of the sound in not more than eight feet of water, with a muddy bottom. We found here an old man residing with his family in a small wooden house, with a garden attached. He had lived in this spot for sixty years, and had seven sons; one of these, a cripple, was with him; the other six he said were away in the

woods hunting either for deer, or beavers, otters, martens, and other fur-bearing animals.

Our first object was to visit the river, which we rowed up about a mile. It had a width of fifty or sixty yards, and a depth of several feet, with a tolerably gentle current. A little farther up, however, the men at the neighbouring hut assured us there was a long rapid, and that our only means of ascent would be hauling the boat by a long line. On returning to the vessel we set to work to prepare, packed up four or five days' provisions, got ready the lines, got out the square sail for a tent, &c.

August 13th.—At seven this morning we set off. After rowing about a mile between wooded banks we came to a part where the river made several short turns through rocky precipices of white limestone and quartz, frequently eating its way into their bases, and leaving deep overhanging shelves. At about three miles we arrived at the foot of the rapids, where the scenery was highly striking and picturesque, lofty cliffs of pure white limestone rising abruptly out of the woods to a height of 300 or 400 feet, and being themselves clothed with thick wood round

HAP. III.

avers, imals. which dth of l feet. e farbourl, and haulng to acked y the c. g we ween e the rocky , fre-, and about the iking white roods being ound

CHAP. III.] HUM

HUMBER RIVER.

their sides and over their summits. Three men now took a long towing-line, while the skipper and another man stood at the bow and stern of the boat to guide her in the eddies and among the rocks and boulders. There was but little strand for the men to walk, and they had occasionally to wade through the water, or clamber along the edge of the woods, passing the rope from one to the other round the trees. However, after some hard work, we at length reached the head of the rapid, which is nearly a mile long, and stopped to rest and refresh on a bank of sand above it. Several seals rose in the still water above the rapids, but took care to keep out of gun-shot. One or two passed close by us in the rapids, but we were then too busily employed to think of shooting them. Above the rapids the river has a more straight course, and the hills recede from it without losing their height, enclosing a valley about two miles wide. This valley is filled with groves of birch, and several small brooks fall into the river. The river itself widens to 100 or 150 yards, with a shallower bed, sandy shoals existing in places, with only narrow

channels sufficient for our boat between them. One straight reach, however, is two or three miles long and five or six feet deep. Above this, and about six miles above the lower rapids, we came upon some others. The upper part of these rapids, for about a quarter of a mile in length, is much more difficult and dangerous than any part of the lower rapid. The principal mass of water rushes with the greatest force and rapidity over large boulders, and sweeps against a steep rocky bank. The bank affords no footing, and the force of the water would not admit of any boat being towed up it. We accordingly tried the other side of the river, but here there was no continuous channel of sufficient depth. We were therefore obliged to unload the boat, carry the things above the rapids, and afterwards fairly lift the boat over the rocks from one little pool to another, and drag her in the best manner we could. With much labour we got her at last into deep water, and again proceeded with the oars. About half a mile above these upper rapids we suddenly came out upon a lake. This was a very beautiful sheet of water, two or three miles across, and HAP, III.

them. three Above lower The uarter fficult lower rushes large rocky d the f any lingly there lepth. boat. afterfrom in the ur we promile came utiful and

CHAP. III.]

DEER POND.

with no land visible at its farther extremity, which bore from us about north-east. Some strips of sand formed its banks just at the entrance from the river, on which were several fresh deer-tracks. The sand, however, soon gave place to boulders, upon which it was scarcely possible to walk, from their round, smooth, and slippery surfaces. This border of boulders was about three or four yards across, with a steep slope, and above it was the usual bush of fir-trees growing out of piles of soft moss. As the evening was now closing in, and it began to rain, we hauled our boat up on the southern shore of the lake, and selected the smoothest place we could find among the wood-covered rocks for our bivouac. We cleared a small space by cutting down a tree or two, rigged one of these across the branches of two that were left standing, threw the sail over it, stretching which out towards the ground we pegged it down, and thus made a very sufficient tent, which, though it rained hard during the night, kept us tolerably dry. The dampness of the ground we partly avoided by lying on the fir-boughs, the trimmings of the trees we cut down for fire-wood.

F 3

August 14th.—I was awoke at daybreak this morning by the cry of the "Loo," or great northern diver, a very handsome dark bird with white spots, and almost as large as a goose. Its cry is a wild unearthly yell, with a rather musical cadence, and sometimes a sharp termination. It might be imitated by sounding with a shrill and prolonged note the words "yă hoo," and ending by a short "chuck." From the loudness and closeness of the sound this morning, I concluded one to be close alongshore, and stole quietly down with my gun, but could only see two at the distance of at least half a mile. The water was perfectly still, and under such circumstances it is astonishing to what a distance their cry will be heard along its surface. It was a dark heavy morning, but as soon as we had breakfasted we proceeded along the shore of the lake, shooting a young gull by the way, to a small brook coming out of a narrow valley at he south-east corner of the lake. Here I shot a couple of beautiful grey-spotted kingfishers, which were new to my eyes, but are, I believe, common in North America. A little breeze soon after sprang up, and the clouds dispersed,

HAP. III.

break great bird as a , with nes a ed by te the short ess of to be with stance pers it is v will dark reakf the , to a ley at shot shers, lieve, reeze ersed.

HUMBER RIVER.

CHAP. III.

and we sailed with a fair wind up the lake. The high ground around the south-west end of the lake gradually slopes down into a flat country at its north-east extremity, the hills being close to the lake on its south-east side, but on its north-west side gradually receding from it and running off in a connected chain of rugged hills as far to the north as the eye could follow them. When we had sailed about half way up the lake we could just discern the tops of the low woods in the flat land round its northern extremisy, from which circumstance, and from the time we took to traverse it, I judged it to be about fifteen miles long.

At its north-west corner we found the river again, coming in, in two branches, each about fifty yards across and several feet deep; these branches joined in about 200 yards, enclosing thus a delta whose base was about 200 or 300 yards in length. The banks of the lake hereabouts were flat and sandy, with occasional small marshes. Proceeding up the river, we found its banks, rarely rising more than ten or twenty feet, everywhere covered with dense wood, consisting of fir, larch, spruce, birch,

and pine, many trees being of good size, and capable of affording good timber. The river was frequently 100 yards broad, but got more shallov as we proceeded, and at one or two places we had some difficulty in finding water enough for our After proceeding about five miles boat. against a tolerably rapid stream, we encamped on the north side of the river among a grove We had seen but little game, of birches. consisting only of two geese and a few divers, and had lost much time in attempts to procure these, having only succeeded in adding two or three divers and the young gull to our stock of provisions. These, with the addition of a lump of salt pork, we boiled all together in our boat's kettle, and, thickening the broth with a little flour, we generally cleared off all its contents, both fluid and solid. To the bouillée of the kettle we added some molassestea and a couple of common sea-biscuits both morning and evening, taking a biscuit or so during the day as we had leisure or appetite.

August 15th.—On coming out of our tent this morning I could hear, the air being perfectly still, a dull but continued noise of falling

CHAP. III.]

THE UPPER RAPIDS.

water, which promised ill for the farther extension of our journey. However, we set off in a thin mist, and after getting a mile or two farther came to some islands on the north-west side of the river, opposite which another river came in from the north-east. Among these islands we saw several wild geese, but the noise of our oars had rendered them too alert to be approached within gunshot. Just above these islands the mist suddenly cleared off, and we saw some great rapids right a-head, whose foaming waters seemed to offer an insuperable barrier to our farther progress. Nevertheless, we landed at their foot, and, taking one of the men, I set off to see how far they extended. After a most difficult and toilsome scramble through the woods, which were rendered worse even than usual by a quantity of low alder-like bushes growing on the banks of the river, we came out in about half a mile on the head of the rapids, and found a deep still reach stretching off some distance beyond. Eagerly desiring to penetrate along these unknown waters, I sent the man back with directions to bring up the boat, and I would wait for them. After waiting an hour or two with-

AP, III.

size, The but and difour miles mped rove ame, ivers, ocure vo or stock of a er in broth ff all the issesboth or so ite. tent perlling

out seeing any signs of it, however, I retraced my steps and found the party comfortably seated round a fire with the tea-kettle boiling. and on remonstrating with them the skipper, Gaden, said it would be impossible to drag the heavy punt up these rapids, and, moreover, that they had trusted to killing more game, and had not more than a day's provision left. The rapids were certainly worse than the last and longer, and the boat was better fitted for a heavy sea than a shallow river: still I thought it possible to get it up; but I saw the men were gloomy, and did not like the job, and to do it would require them to "work with a will." The most serious obstacle, however, was the want of provisions, as, if we knocked a hole in the boat against one of the rocks in the rapids, and were thus delayed any time, we might be a day or two without food. I accordingly reluctantly consented to go, back, under the delusive hope of being one day able to return better provided to overcome the obstacles of the route. I insisted, however, on exploring the other river which we had passed, and which came in from the north-east, and, if that offered an easier passage, ascending it as high

CHAP. III.]

INDIAN WIGWAM.

as possible, and trusting to our guns for support. This other river made several short turns and then became wide and shallow, and we came shortly in sight of a set of rapids quite as bad as those we had just left. The banks of the river here were open and pleasant, and on one sandy point we found the skeleton of an Indian wigwam, consisting of a circular set of poles sloping inward and meeting at top, forming a rude cone. We now turned about, and sailed rapidly down the river into the lake, on reaching which we encamped close to the mouth of the left branch of the river. The view of the lake, here receding from the flat country into the bosom of the hills round its south-west end, was very beautiful, and superior to anything I had yet seen in the country, the features of both ground and water being broader and larger, and not frittered away into mere picturesque nooks and corners, as is usually the case in Newfoundland. The hills at the south-west end of the lake are gneiss and mica slate, containing quartz rock and primary limestone. The flat country is composed of brown and red sandstones and conglomerates. We found

HAP. III.

raced tably iling, ipper, drag eover. rame, left. e last for a ought men nd to will." s the ble in apids, night ingly r the eturn es of bring and that high

this evening near our tent a trap for foxes and martens; it consisted of the upright stump of a tree partially hollowed out, and four boards nailed over it, forming a box, open on one side; a heavy log of wood fell across this side on the withdrawal of a slight prop connected with a trigger inside the box; on this trigger was a piece of venison for a bait, and when the animal seized it it brought down the log of wood, which broke its neck. It belonged, we afterwards discovered, to the man living down at the mouth of the river.

August 16th.—There was heavy rain last night, but our tent was waterproof. To-day we pulled down the lake against a brisk wind, and dined on a little island at the bottom of it, on which were many bilberries, or whortleberries, which the men called "hirts." We then went to the rapids, and with some difficulty "eased" the boat down by a line in the best channel we could find. On arriving at the lower rapids, however, we determined on shooting them, which we did safely, and, after again admiring the striking scenery of the cliffs and woods around them, we reached our vessel at sunset. CHAP. III.

foxes stump l four en on es this p conon this c, and vn the It bee man

n last 'o-day wind, of it, ortle-We diffin the ng_at d on after f the l our CHAP. III.]

INDIAN FAMILY.

August 17th.-I had been too eager to set off, at starting, to extract information from the old man living here, while he by no means seemed inclined to communicate it regarding the surrounding country. He now told us, however, that the branch of the river we last visited came out of a large pond on the east, which had a half-moon shape, stretching away to the south farther than either he or his sons had ever penetrated, and that in a south-west gale there was a heavier sea or swell on this lake than was safe for a small boat. He said also that this pond stretched towards St. George's Bay, at which place I hoped to hear further intelligence of it. On the opposite side of the sound to the old man's house we found an Indian wigwam, with an old Indian woman and her two daughters, one of the latter of whom has a daughter married to one of the old man's sons opposite. The old woman had a kind of moustache tattooed on each cheek, and spoke nothing but Indian, but one of the daughters could speak English. They were busy making baskets and mocassins, and were very neat, tidy, civil people I bought a pair

of very pretty mocassins for half a dollar, made of dressed deer-skin (like Woodstock gloves), and ornamented in front with bits of coloured cloth. The wigwam was composed of a frame of poles like that before mentioned, and covered with large strips of birch bark, kept in their places by other poles resting upon them. The top of the cone was left uncovered to let out the smoke, and the door was closed by a curtain of deer-skin. There was a small fire on the ground in the centre, around which was arranged a layer of small boughs and twigs of fir in a circular fan shape, forming a mat to sit down on. They sat something like Turks, with their legs doubled under them. An Indian man, the husband of one of the daughters, was living with them, but was now away in the woods.

August 18th, 19th, and 20th.—Calms and contrary winds detained us in various parts of Humber Sound, and we only reached Lark Harbour on the evening of the 20th. We visited one family about half way down the sound that were much more civil and intelligent people than the old fellow's family at the CHAP. III.

r. made gloves). oloured a frame l, and k, kept g upon overed closed was a around boughs formsomeunder of one n, but

arts of Lark We yn the ntelliat the

CHAP. III.]

WILD FRUITS.

head of it. Their name was Blanchard, and the old man had lived here about sixty years, having settled there before the breaking out of the American war. He had several sons that were getting married and beginning to settle about him. His house, though small, was neat and comfortable, and he had two or three small fields under cultivation. They were just getting in the hay from one small meadow, and it appeared of good quality. They had very good currants, raspberries, and gooseberries in the garden hedges. These three kinds of fruit we also found at various places wild in the woods. At one part of Lark Harbour, where there had been one or two temporary huts and cleared spots, the raspberries were in the utmost profusion, and were equal both in size and flavour to the best garden raspberries of England. Currants were found pretty plentifully also, chiefly on the cliffs, or wherever there was a broken bank with rocky ledges. They were both red and black, and of a different species from our English currant, being covered all over with small spines like the rough red gooseberry:

the branches, too, had occasionally a soft thorn. Their flavour was rather harsh, but still very agreeable, especially when made into puddings. The gooseberries were more rare, but occasionally we found a small bush, the fruit being small and very sweet, precisely like the small rough red gooseberry of England.

August 21st.—Set sail, and tried to beat up for St. George's Bay against a south-west breeze, which, when we had made about fifteen miles, failed us, and for two days it was stark calm. There we lay rolling idly on the long smooth swell, with a burning sun and not a breath of air, and with the land in sight at a distance of ten miles, through a hazy atmosphere. On the 24th, finding ourselves in soundings, having drifted some distance with the tide, we tied a hook to each end of the log-line, baited it with a piece of pork, and in about an hour and a half we had the deck covered with great cod-fish. There were fifty-five of them, weighing from five pounds to thirty pounds apiece, and the men split them and packed them into the beef-tubs with some brine. Having once caught one, we were at

CHAP. III.

t thorn. ill very ddings. t occae fruit ike the

beat up th-west about it was on the in and n sight a hazy rselves istance end of pork, ad the e were inds to them some ere at

CHAP. III.]

COD-FISHING.

no loss for bait, as there was always something in the stomach of one sufficiently attractive for another; or, if his stomach was empty, a piece of that itself generally tempted one of his fellows. The most killing bait was a bivalve shell, with its enclosed animal (some species of *Glycimeris*, I believe *G. siliqua*, which we found in several of them.

CHAPTER IV.

Cape St. George—St. George's Bay—Sulleon, an Indian, engaged as a guide—St. George's Inlet—Exploring Party to the Grand Pond or Lake—A Gale thereon— Beautiful Exhibition of Aurora Borealis—Coalbrook— Signs of a Coal-country—Discovery of Coal—Return of Party—Hardships undergone—Hare Hill—Ories Hill— Eligible Sites for new Settlements.

August 25th.—A light wind during the night from the west had brought us close up to Cape St. George, and we made a tack in order to weather it, when a gale sprang up from the south-west, and we were obliged to take in our topsail, and failed in getting sufficiently to windward. We then hoisted the topsail and made another tack, the sea rising very rapidly, and barely succeeded in scraping round the point, which is both shoal and rocky. There was a short perpendicular wall of rock at the margin of the water, up which great seas were now jumping and dashing in

CHAP. IV.

Indian, ploring ereon prook turn of Hill—

night p to ck in g up ed to suffithe rising and wall wall thich g in CHAP. IV.]

ST. GEORGE'S BAY.

a style that would have rendered our escape very problematical had we struck on anything, or had any of our gear given way at a critical moment. Once fairly round, we easily hauled off into the bay, and then squared the vards and sailed merrily before it. When we were about half-way up the bay we saw the Cleopatra, the frigate on the station, coming out, at which I was greatly annoyed, as I had hoped to have met with her, and had now been twice unsuccessful. St. George's is a very fine bay, rapidly narrowing towards the head, with two straight shores, each of which affords good anchorage. The only harbour, however, is just at the head, formed by the projection of a narrow spit of sand; and even that seems rapidly filling up with sand, as it is only near the entrance there is water enough for vessels, while the rest of the basin is nearly dry at low water, and is at no place deep enough for anything but a punt. On these low sandy shores at the head of the bay the tide, though not great, becomes very apparent, rising and falling from five to eight feet. The low spit of sand forming the harbour is in some places covered with a stunted vegetation of fir-trees. Just at the point, however,

these are cleared away, and there is a collection of wooden houses scattered about as if they had been taken up from some town by a tornado, and settled here when it ceased. The population seemed to be about half French, and the rest English, Jerseymen, and a few Indians. There might be perhaps 500 or 600 people at this time, but these are mostly transitory inhabitants. The French all leave in November to return in May, and most of the others retire either to more distant settlements or to houses in the woods on the opposite shore during the winter. There were three or four schooners at anchor, and an old brig, waiting to take fish to St. Pierre.*

* It may perhaps not be generally known that the fishery along the whole western coast of Newfoundland, from Cape Ray round the north point to Cape John, belongs to the French, or at least that they claim and assert their exclusive right. The words of the treaty, I believe, admit of some dispute; but it is provided that, though the property of the land is vested in the British crown, neither nation shall make permanent settlements, and the French shall have the right of drying fish on any part of the coast they choose. The provision for non-settlement is practically disregarded by both parties, as the English settle for their own advantage, and the French connive at or encourage their doing so on condition that they take care of their stores and fishing establishments. They also allow the English settlers to fish within the bays. There is, however, no law nor authority, nor means of establishing any, along this coast, every

CHAP. IV.

collecas if n by a ceased. rench, a few or 600 y tranave in of the ements pposite uree or l brig,

e fishery m Cape s to the exclusive of some v of the on shall have the choose. regarded advandoing so l fishing ttlers to r authort, every

CHAP. IV.]

SULLEON.

August 26th and 27th.-As the Beaufort had made a deal of water lately, we put her ashore on the beach here, and at low water examined her bottom and caulked her a little, while I strolled about the neighbourhood to make²acquaintance with the people, and get intelligence of the interior of the country. I met with an Indian at one of the wigwams, named Sulleon, a very decent fellow, with a good character. He told me that he had a boat on the great pond I had heard of, and that the nearest point of it was within twenty miles of the harbour, and that he knew all the country perfectly well. He said it would take a week to go and come back again, and he agreed to go with me as a guide, taking my four men to carry provisions.

August 28th.—I had got everything ready for a start this morning, but the weather was unfavourable, and I felt out of spirits, having

man depending on his own strength to protect himself. A man of we of both nations goes round once a-year to prevent great disturbances, but, to the honour of the settlers be it said, there are none to prevent. They all of all nations seem to live comfortably and peaceably together; and the only want I heard expressed was a wish for the establishment of schools in St. George's Bay.

VOL. I.

G

got a touch of the influenza, which was very prevalent among the people in the harbour, some of the children having died of it. In the middle of the day there was a thunder-storm, by which the sultry closeness of the air was removed, and the aspect of things greatly renovated. Accordingly, at four P.M. we set out in the boat for the head of the inlet at the extremity of the bay, a distance of ten miles, where we intended to sleep, in order to set off early in the morning. The entrance to this inlet is narrow and shoal, and the tide runs in and out with great rapidity. We with difficulty scraped over the bar, then turned short on the starboard hand where there is a deep channel, the centre of the inlet being one great sand-All the head of St. George's Bay bank. seems to be undergoing the process of filling up. The south shores of the bay are composed chiefly of soft red sandstone, the débris of which is washed up the bay by the tide, and sometimes drifted no doubt by the heavy south-west gales. The sand-bank in the inlet extended from its mouth about two-thirds of its length; the upper part had deep water; it was therefore evidently not filled up by the

HAP. IV.

s very rbour, In the storm, ir was reatly we set at the miles. set off his inuns in fficulty on the hannel, t sand-'s Bay filling mposed bris of le, and heavy he inlet irds of ater; it by the

CHAP. IV.] ST. GEORGE'S INLET.

washings of the brooks, but by that of the tide. In the middle of the sand-bank lay an old schooner, which had been wrecked outside and drifted in here. At the head of the inlet we found a brook coming in on its south side, nearly 100 yards across, but with a very shallow bed, and full of rocks and boulders. At the mouth of this was a little strand backed by a slight face of rock or little cliff about ten feet high. Against this face of rock some sticks were laid and covered with bark, the ends being closed by posts, with moss stuffed between them. Some stones reared at one end formed the fireplace, and a small square aperture at the other served for a door. The dimensions of this little cabin were about ten feet in length, six feet in width, and the roof sloped from about five feet high on one side down to the ground on the otner. Here we cooked our supper, and, after drying some fir boughs for a bed, lay down to sleep, there being just room enough for six people lying "heads and points," as the men called it, meaning heads and feet alternately.

August 29th.—We were up with the dawn, and while the breakfast was cooking Sulleon

G 2

went to get a shot at some geese, but returned unsuccessful. We then took the boat to the north side of the inlet to the mouth of a little brook, where we hauled her up and secured her to a tree, hiding the oars and mast in the woods. It took us then some time to divide and strap on our several loads. We took in a small sprit-sail for Sulleon's boat, and a few tools to make a mast and an oar, a bag of bread, a small bag of flour, some pieces of pork, tea, sugar, and molasses, a hatchet or two, a large boat's kettle and a tea-kettle, rope, and various other articles. Sulleon had a bundle of his own of things he was taking in for his family, as he intended to live at the pond during the winter, besides his gun and ammunition. I had a box-sextant, and prismatic compass, a knapsack, containing notebooks, and a lot of biscuit, tea, loaf-sugar, two or three pounds of raisins, powder, shot, and balls, a lump of ham, and various other articles, and strapped on the top of it a blanket and mackintosh cape and leggings, besides a hammer-bag and hammer, a shot-belt and a doublebarrelled gun, a small telescope, and lots of things in the pockets of my shooting-coat. We HAP. IV.

urned o the little ecured in the divide k in a a few bag of ces of het or kettle. n had ing in at the n and l prisr notear, two ot, and rticles, et and h hamloublelots of t. We

CHAP. IV.] WOODS AND MARSHES.

thus had all pretty good loads. We struck, near the mouth of the brook, into a little path leading through the woods, which none but an Indian would have found, and in about half a mile came out on a marsh. This had a gentle upward slope for about a mile, when it inclined the other way down to a skirt of wood bordering a brook. Scrambling through this, and walking a little way up the bed of the brook, we got out on another long flat marsh, where we called a halt. I here divested myself of my hammer-bag, and also of my blanket and mackintosh, and distributed them among the men, as I found my load too heavy. After toiling for two miles across this weary marsh we came again to some skirts of wood and a brook, and made some rapid turns among underwood and small wet spots to avoid large masses of wood. We were still gradually rising, and at length got up a steep little ascent on to a high level tract of marsh three or four miles across. The wind was fresh and cool, moderating a little the great heat of the sun; and from the place where we now stood the scenery was very beautiful, but the extreme toil of the journey took away all

pleasure in looking at it. When we set out Sulleon declared the distance to be about fifteen miles, and we intended to sleep that night on the banks of the pond. It was now three o'clock in the afternoon, and he told us we were only half way. It seems ridiculous to talk of walking seven miles and a half in about as many hours, but I really do not think the distance was more, and yet such was the nature of the country that we all felt knocked up. We toiled on, however, two or three miles farther, shooting a brace of ptarmigan on our way, when I found it would be hopeless to accomplish the journey before night; and, as Sulleon said there was a tilt in a wood close by, we made for it and found a tolerable hut, with the exception of the roof, which had fallen in. Relieved from our loads, we soon had the roof put to rights and slept soundly, with the exception of my luckily waking in the middle of the night just as the moss of the walls near the fire was catching from the flames, and thus saving the house from being burnt down over our heads.

August 30th.—We awoke rather late this morning, the sun having just risen. Before

CHAP. IV.

set out about ep that as now told us iculous half in t think vas the ked up. les farır way, accom-Sulleon by, we ith the len in. he roof the exmiddle lls near nd thus vn over

te this Before

CHAP. IV.] PARK-LIKE SCENERY.

starting we left sufficient provisions for a meal in the tilt against our return, in case of accidents, as, notwithstanding our heavy loads, we seemed scarcely to have brought enough to last us a week. It was a lovely morning, with little or no wind. A beautiful valley on our left winded down to St. George's Bay, over whose expanse we could see blue hills sweeping round in the distance, while on our right rose wooded eminences with a park-like scenery on their slopes. But oh how unlike a park when we came to traverse it ! What would I not have given for a few miles of the fine turf of old England, or even a heathery Scotch mountain; anything but the rough, uneven, scrubby, yet soft and wet spongy mass of moss we had to stumble through, with a step between walking and jumping! The Indian got on most easily, with his toes turned in, his back bent, and a light yet slouching kind of gait, dexterously avoiding both the high knobs and the deep holes, and keeping a steady pace over all impediments. After crossing the large marsh we were in, and two smaller ones, we came to a little circular pond, round which we went, and, passing through

another small marsh, entered the skirt of woods bordering the grand pond. This wood where we crossed it was about three miles The trees generally were by far the wide. finest* I had seen, and they stood wider apart, and were more open and easy to traverse, so that we could see easily twenty or thirty yards on each side of us. Many, however, had fallen across our path, which was by no means too free from obstruction. About half way through the woods we crossed a brook, flowing east, and falling into the pond. We then ascended for some distance up a gentle slope, and at length from the brow of a small cliff caught our first sight of the Grand Pond. And a beautiful sight it was; a narrow strip of blue water, widening as it proceeded to about two miles, lay between bold rocky precipices covered with wood, and rising almost directly from the water to a height of 500 or 600 feet, having bare tops a little farther back at a still greater elevation. The pond

* On the banks of a small brook in this wood I saw a fine ash-tree, which to my eyes seemed the same as the common English ash. It was the only one, however, I saw in the country.

CHAP. IV.] FIRST VIEW OF THE GRAND POND. 129

stretched directly from us for the first six or seven miles towards the east-south-east, when it curved gradually round towards the north, enclosing the end of a lofty island, and the water passed out of sight between the hills. At the foot of the eminence on which we stood a considerable brook, thirty or forty yards across, but narrow and full of boulders, ran down through the woods towards the pond. Passing down this we came in about a quarter of a mile to Sulleon's boat, secure and in good condition, on the bank. We here thankfully laid down our burthens, and, after resting a little, I began to feel very unwell, with headache and the feverish symptoms of influenza; a little tea, however, revived me, and, leaving the men to get ready the boat and bring it down the brook, I walked on with Sulleon to the mouth of the river and the pond. Here we found some black duck,* and shot several, which, all hot and perspiring as I was, I fool-

* Sulleon saw one of these ducks on the wing a long way off, and, pulling me down with him into some bushes, he pinched his nose with his finger and thumb, and then quacked so naturally that the bird flew right over us, and I shot him as he passed. Any device which induces wild animals to come within shot is called "tolling them."

HAP. IV.

irt of wood miles r the apart, rse, so thirty wever. by no it half brook, We gentle small Pond. strip led to y prelmost f 500 arther pond

> saw a e comsaw in

ishly waded after. A little along the south shore of the lake we found a wigwam, in good repair, of which we took possession, and began putting the boat in order, making a mast and a couple of oars, as there were only two in the boat. We found, by the wigwam, a birchbark canoe, very nicely made, and of an elegant shape, which we launched, and amused ourselves by paddling about in it. We did not think it worth while to take it with us, however, as it required a kind of management in which none of us but Sulleon was skilled. We had a grand soup-making this evening of black ducks, which are excellent eating.

August 31st.—Very unwell this morning, and the weather very bad; we put off, however, in heavy rain, and with the wind dead against us. We were obliged to keep close in-shore, and the boat, being small and heavily laden, made but slow progress. Arrived opposite the end of the island, we found a very good wigwam, where we determined to shelter, and where I lay all day with a head-ache, toothache, back-ache, and all the disagreeables of a regular cold. At night there was a violent gale from the north-east, that we expected

CHAP. IV.] A GALE ON THE LAKE.

HAP. IV.

south good began st and in the birchn elemused Ve did th us, rement killed. ing of

rning, wever, gainst shore, laden, posite good r, and tooths of a iolent pected every minute either to blow down the wigwam or to bring some of the trees down upon it.

September 1st.—The lake, at daybreak this morning, was in a sheet of foam, but the north-east wind was evidently moderating, and about seven it shifted to south-west. This being a fair wind for us, we got our things into the boat, and set sail. From the point where we slept the lake divided into two arms, each from half a mile to a mile wide, enclosing an island whose summit rose to the same height as the surrounding hills. Each of the two arms of the lake, therefore, formed a narrow ravine, stretching away for several miles, till, with a gradual curve, they seemed to meet behind the island.* We chose the left hand, or the north-west, of these two arms, as Sulleon said the other was the best to return by, having most "harbours." As we sailed across towards the island, we were sheltered by the high land behind us, and had but a gentle breeze, but when we had entered the arm, and got into the draught between the precipices of the mainland on one side and the island on * This island is, in fact, full twenty miles long.

131

ben

the other, the wind rapidly increased to a heavy gale. The greater part of these cliffs, though very steep, yet had a sufficient slope for the growth of trees, with an occasional bare face of rock; the last twenty feet, however, was usually quite bare, plunging like a sloping wall down into the water, which had an unknown depth close up to the shore. Sulleon told me he knew a French fisherman who had brought three fishing-lines into the lake, and at a short distance from the end of the island had failed in finding bottom with them all tied together , now, as a French fishing-line is about thirty-three fathoms in length, this gives a depth of upwards of 100 fathoms. This would make this narrow ravine as deep from the surface of the water to the bottom as it is from the water to the top of the hills. That the water is of great depth is certain, for as we drifted before the blast great rolling waves followed us, higher than our heads, and even calming occasionally the lower part of the sail. This, although only a small sprit-sail, we were shortly obliged to reef, leaving a triangle not much bigger than a pocket-handkerchief; and even then one man sat with his foot against

HAP. IV.

to a cliffs. slope sional howlike a ad an illeon o had , and sland n all ine is this homs. deep om as That as we s foleven e sail. were e not and ainst

CHAP. IV.]

WILD GEESE.

the step of the mast, while another supported it from behind to prevent its being blown out. Sulleon steered with a paddle, and it was entirely by his skill that we were two or three times saved from being swamped by the great rollers that swept after us, and which just curled in occasionally over the stern of the boat. In the midst of all this we came suddenly on five geese, and sent the contents of three barrels after them as they rose, but the boat rolled so much that we both missed; neither, probably, could we have stopped to get it, had we killed one. About twelve o'clock we arrived at the end of the island, which gradually sloped down into comparatively low ground, and, putting into a small sandy cove, we went ashore for a few minutes to stretch our legs and refresh ourselves. We then again set sail, and as the lake was now three or four miles across, and the hills were getting lower, we no longer had the force of the wind so much concentrated, and sailed rapidly and pleasantly on till about five o'clock, when we were within five or six miles of the head of the pond, and landed in a pleasant little cove on the northwest side. We must have sailed at least forty

miles to-day, and as we started seven miles from one end of the pond, and stopped six or seven from the other end, it gives a length of about fifty-four miles to the pond, which agrees with Sulleon's computation of eighteen leagues, or fifty-four miles. At the point at which we landed we found the frame of a large wigwam, which we covered with bark to a sufficient height to keep off the wind, and, the night proving fine, we were pretty comfortable. At dusk I walked on along the sandy beach, but was soon stopped by great boulders and masses of rock, requiring a good, light, and steady footing. I sat down on one of them, and gave myself up to the influence of the scene. The wind had sunk to a calm. and the sky was cloudless. Before me lay the lake, perfectly still, except here and there a ripple from a stray breath of air creeping across its surface; beyond it rose woody hills getting black with the shades of night; over these hills and woods there was no track except the deer-path; in all the country round there was no human being except myself and the few whose voices I could just hear from the little point, where a small gleam of light

CHAP. IV.

miles six or gth of which rhteen int at of a ark to , and, comg the great good, n one luence calm. ay the iere a eping y hills over track round f and from light

CHAP. IV.] AURORA BOREALIS.

and an occasional spark among the trees betrayed our bivouac. Except this, not a sound was to be heard,-literally not a sound,-not a ripple of the water, not a stir among the woods, not the hum of a single insect, nor the voice of a single bird. I believe this utter stillness is characteristic of all American woods; in Newfoundland it is most remarkable: if you hold your breath, your ear cannot detect the slightest interruption to the dead and dreary silence. It may, perhaps, savour of affectation, but there was something most oppressive to my feelings in this utter absence of sound, and I rose to go back, when my eye was struck by the most brilliant aurora I think I ever saw. A belt of yellow light rose in the north-east, and passing just above both the Bears it disappeared in the north-west horizon. It was not a perfect arch, but a sinuous band, and it had . a regular onward motion, like that of a waving ribbon, proceeding from the northeast to the north-west. The northern edge, or base, of this belt was a clear and well-defined continuous mass of light, while upwards it faded away into faint parallel rays. These rays had no divergence, and seemed to shoot

upwards to a greater or less height from a certain long narrow base or floor, the plane of which was parallel to the surface of the earth. I could have likened it to a long and continued army of celestial spearmen, radiant from their own light, marching in dense array, with a regular sweeping course, and gradually unfolding themselves from a distant host massed together in the north-east, and passing along in regular procession towards the north-west. What increased the illusion was, a faint reflection of the central band a little distance on each side it, but more perceptibly on the outside, or towards the south, and this reflection followed the primary band in its long sinuosity, exhibiting the same occasional variations of brightness, and the same upward glancing of the light. I am sure the rays proceeded not from any point in the north, but shot upwards at right angles to the surface of the earth. I am not sure whether I render this description intelligible, but the effect to me was as if I was viewing a portion of a sinuous collar of light, at a great height above, but generally parallel to some parallel of latitude north of me, and thus encircling the pole of the earth,

CHAP. IV.

from a lane of earth. contit from . with lly unnassed along -west. reflecn each ide, or llowed exhiorightof the t from rds at I am iption s if I lar of erally rth of earth.

CHAP. IV.]

COAL-BROOK.

while from this collar perpendicular rays shot upwards. Thus both the arched appearance of the band and the convergence or divergence of the rays, if there were any, would be the effect of perspective merely. At first the greatest mass of light was in the north-east, but it got less as the stream proceeded from it, without perceptibly increasing in the north-The effect of this brilliant exhibition in west. the sky reflected in the still waters of the lake that stretched away beneath it, was majestic in the extreme, and I watched it till its brilliancy began to fade, and at length passed away. There was certainly no noise proceeding from it, or, in the dead stillness of all around, I must have heard it.

September 2nd.—Sailed across the pond to a small brook near its north-eastern extremity, where Sulleon had been told by another Indian that he had seen a considerable bed of coal about three years ago. We traversed the woods along the bed of the brook for about half a mile, when we came on some small cliffs formed by the washing away of the bank. Most of these were covered with gravel and rubbish from above so as to conceal the regular

strata, which appeared to consist of alternations of yellow sandstone and dark shale or indurated clay. About a mile up the brook, however, we came to a small cliff clearly exposed, and there between thin beds of shale and soft sandstone we found a bed of coal six inches thick, consisting principally of good cannel coal. The bed seen by the Indian was said to be three feet thick, and I have no doubt was now concealed by the rubbish in one of the cliffs below. We went some distance farther up the brook, but could find no more beds, though Sulleon picked up a lump of good coal six inches thick, and apparently a part of a larger mass; and as the current of the brook is very rapid, and its bed rocky, it must necessarily have come from above. What I had seen, however, was sufficient to prove that all these clays and sandstones, extending through the flat country round the head of the pond, belonged to a coal formation containing no doubt good beds of workable coal. The flat country we had now arrived at was the same we had reached up the Humber River, the forking of that river near the rapids where we turned back not being at a greater

CHAP. IV.

alternahale or brook. rly exf shale coal six f good an was ave no oish in ne disind no lump rently ent of ky, it above. ent to stones. id the nation rkable ved at mber apids reater

CHAP. IV.] FLAT COAL-COUNTRY.

distance than about eight miles from us. This flat country was of very considerable extent towards the north, as from the point where we slept last night I had noticed two or three low blue hills rising out of it in the distance, which Sulleon said were close to the head of White Bay. The cliffs and hills around the south-west end of the pond were composed of gneiss, mica slate, and granite, the two former of which were the same as the rocks we had found in the lower part of the Humber River. For the geological details, however, I must refer the reader to the report in the Appendix. The air in the woods was most close and stifling, and the mosquitoes annoying beyond all conception, forming by no means the least of the impediments to steady geologizing in this country. Arriving again at the beach, Sulleon and I walked along it, as it was clear and sandy, and sent the men in the boat to a point about two miles distant, and in the centre of the head of the lake. We here found a fine river coming in from the north, fifty or sixty yards wide and several feet deep. The wind had again risen from the south-west, and the men came in drenched

with spray, having had some difficulty in getting the boat off the shore. We found near the mouth of the river a pretty comfortable wigwam, where we dined, after which, as I had now ascertained the fact of the existence of coal, I wished to return, as our provisions began to run short. The wind, however, was too strong to admit of our making way against it, so we set off up the river in hopes of getting some game. We went up the stream for about three miles, till it became gradually too shoal to admit of our easy progress, without finding anything but a solitary diver, which we shot.

Sulleon told me that the river, which is easily navigable by a canoe, came out of another pond about six miles off. This pond is eight miles long, but near its southern end the river is again found, and, proceeding up it, three more ponds are met with, each about six miles long, and the last of which is about sixteen miles from Hall's Bay. The Indians, carrying their canoes overland from this pond, come in about half a mile to another brook, down which they proceed to Hall's Bay. Returning to the grand pond, about three miles west of the

CHAP. IV.

alty in found comfact of after fact of arn, as wind, of our up the es, till of our but a

ich is nother eight e river three miles ixteen rying me in which to the f the

CHAP. IV.] SHORT OF PROVISIONS.

mouth of the river, an equally large river, if it be not considered the same, runs out of the pond into the Humber River, being the branch of that river from which we last turned back in our former excursion. The distance along the winding of this branch he gave as eight or ten miles, but he said it was too full of rapids to admit of the passage of anything but a canoe, which could be lifted out occasionally and carried.

On going back to the wigwam we shot a couple of "twillecks," a grey long-legged bird, about the size and shape of a plover, that frequents the shores of the lakes and arms of the sea. These two, with the small duck or diver, served us as dinner and supper that night, and breakfast the next morning, with the addition of tea and a cake of bread each. This was not a very plentiful repast, but with their usual improvidence the men had wasted the provisions while they lasted, and now were likely to fare but poorly unless the wind moderated.

September 3rd.—At three o'clock this morning, the wind having moderated, and the moon being high and bright, we got our things into the boat and rowed off. It was dreadfully

cold till after the sun rose, and then the wind We held on, however, hugging freshened. the western shore of the lake, and by eight o'clock we calculated we had made fifteen miles, when we landed to breakfast. The cliffs here consisted of red marls and sandstones, but upon nearing the island we came upon slaty rocks again. As soon as we opened the channel on the north-west side of the island, the wind met us with increased violence, so, hoisting the sail of the boat, we crossed over to the entrance of the opposite channel, where we were more sheltered. We here landed to examine some small ponds in the wood in hopes of finding geese, but were disappointed. We got, however, a quantity of berries, especially a kind the men called "squash-berries," a bright red berry, the size of a currant, growing on a straggling bush six or eight feet high. They were pulpy, sharp, and juicy, and not unpleasant. I had brought a pointer with me called Bell, and as we had lately lived chiefly on water-birds, whose bones she refused, I had been obliged to share my biscuit with her. I taught her, however, now to eat berries. Soon after entering the channel between the island and the main we

CHAP. IV.

e wind ugging eight fifteen The l sande came opened of the ed viocrossed hannel, 'e here in the re disatity of called the size ush six sharp, brought we had whose o share owever, ing the hain we

CHAP. IV.] TRACKS OF CARIBOO.

came to a narrow part where two sandy points stretched opposite to each other. This, Sulleon said, was a favourite place for deer to swim across, and as we found a good wigwam we camped here for the chance. We found on the sand abundance of the fresh tracks of these deer or cariboo, one of which was actually not dry, the animal having, apparently, come out of the water and gone off at our approach. We waited in vain, however, for more, but luckily shot a couple of divers, which served us for supper. The men's bread was now all gone, and we had nothing but tea and our guns for support. I had, however, kept in my knapsack a private store of half a dozen biscuits and a piece of ham, against an emergency, as also a bunch or two of raisins, and we had still a little flour left in the bag, for thickening our soup.

September 4th.—We put off at daylight, and rowed some time against a head wind, the cliffs on each side getting gradually steeper and more lofty. At eight o'clock we found we had barely made three or four miles, the point we had left being still visible. We were now on the island side of the channel, and,

coming to a little strand where there was a small wigwam, we landed to breakfast. It would evidently never do to go on at that rate, and, if the wind continued or increased, we might be three or four days in reaching the south-west extremity of the pond, where we had left some provisions. Sulleon said this island was a good place for deer; accordingly I produced the remaining stock of my provisions, and, sharing them equally among all hands, we determined, after having a tolerable breakfast, to hunt for a cariboo. Leaving two men with the boat, the two others, Sulleon, and myself, set off with our guns. After a stiff and toilsome climb up the woody precipice we arrived at some open marshes at the top, sloping gently towards the centre of the island, where were several ponds, There were one about three miles long. plenty of deer-tracks, but no deer visible. Among some craggy rocks, however, we found an abundance of bilberries, with which, after walking some hours, we partly satisfied our appetites, and Bell learned soon to pick them for herself. We then separated; Sulleon went down to the pond, while I went up to some

b

t

ta

st

h

CI

or th CHAP. IV.

was a st. It t rate, ed, we ng the ere we id this dingly y proamong ving a ariboo. he two ith our up the e open rds the ponds, e were visible. e found h, after ied our k them on went to some

CHAP. IV.] SHOOTING A CARIBOO.

rocky eminences to try to find some ptarmigan, the utter absence of which rather surprised us. After hunting some time in vain, I heard a shot, and shortly after another. Running was out of the question, but I made what haste I could across the marsh to the knoll where I had left the two men stationed with my rifle. They had heard no shot, but on looking about we saw Sulleon sitting on a rock about half a mile off, and on our coming up to him he said, with all the unconcern in the world, "I hab killed a fat buck." Following him down through a thicket into a little marsh, we found the fellow lying on his back, a great beast as big as a small heifer, and shot right through the heart. Sulleon had seen him swim across the pond in the centre of the island, watched where he landed, and stole down through the tangled woods, as none but an Indian can steal, till he came within thirty yards of the beast without disturbing him. We shortly had him skinned, embowelled, cleaned, and cut up. Sulleon being used to it doubled up one side for his load, which could not be less than a hundred-weight, my two men took a VOL. I. H

quarter each, while I made a bundle of the lower jaw with the tongue, the heart, the liver, and a good portion of the tripe, &c., selected by Sulleon, and used by him for different purposes, all wrapped up in the skin. We were now three miles from the boat, the island being five miles across, and had a pretty stiff march across the marshes and barrens under a hot evening sun and our sufficiently heavy loads. We were, however, all in high spirits; and on reaching the precipitous wooded bank of the lake we started on a kind of race to see which should be first to carry the news to the boat. We consequently all lost our way in the woods, all had tumbles, and my bundle fell from my back, and its contents got loose, by which means I arrived last at the camp. Great was the frying, roasting, boiling, frizzling, and stuffing of maws, Bell being by no means the least happy of the party, as venison liver and bones met with her decided approval. Great also was the talking and laughing; and when Sulleon told us in his quiet grave manner that, in coming down the woods, "I fell, my God, at least ten yards!"

g p

or

HAP. IV.

of the t, the e, &c., im for e skin. at. the pretty harrens ficiently in high wooded of race he news lost our and my tents got t at the boiling, being by barty, as · decided ing and s in his lown the yards !":

CHAP. IV.] TIDE IN THE POND.

one would have thought it an excellent sally of wit by the peals of laughter with which it was echoed.—

"For mountain lads can lof at turning of a straw."

Our only drawback was the want of bread and salt, but nothing in this life can be perfect. There was a fine aurora at night, but the rocks and woods above and opposite to us intercepted our view of it. Soon after there were some heavy showers of rain, but

"After that fitful supper we slept well."

September 5th.— At dawn this morning we stowed our meat and baggage in the boat, covering it with the deer skin. The morning was perfectly calm, but foggy, with occasional showers. I noticed before we went off that a piece of wood which we threw into the water floated regularly alongshore in the direction we were going, or towards the south-west end of the pond. Sulleon said there was often a tide in the pond after a high wind. This is no doubt caused by the banking up of the water at one end from the pressure of the wind. There is only one brook runs out of the pond,—namely, that

at the north-west corner, which goes to join the Humber, whose stream is quite inconsiderable compared with the body of water in the lake, and therefore could produce no current either way. Sulleon told me this morning that he had spent two or three severe winters on the banks of the Grand Pond; and that while about fifteen miles of the north-east end of it was frozen over completely every winter, he had never seen the southern part near the island "set fast," or sufficiently frozen over to enable him to cross. This fact goes in corroboration of the statement of the enormous depth of the south-west end of the pond, where the water is narrow and the banks lofty, compared with the north-east end, where the lake is broader and the shores flat. The bottom of the lake at its south-west end must be 300 or 400 feet at least below the level of the sea. One is puzzled to understand the formation of such a deep narrow ravine among these hills, the height of the hills above the sea being by no means great. But, indeed, these narrow crevices are frequent in Newfoundland, and more frequent beneath the level of the sea than above it, as the number of narrow inlets eating

HAP. IV.

join siderin the urrent orning vinters d that st end winter, ear the over to orrobos depth ere the mpared lake is h of the or 400 . One of such lls, the r by no ow cred more a than s eating

CHAP. IV.] DEPTH OF THE POND.

into the coast will testify, they having often a length of ten or twenty miles, a breadth of one or two, and a depth of upwards of 100 fathoms, while the cliffs on each side of them are often not more than 100 feet in height. Two faults near together throwing down the intermediate piece might explain these clefts, but their course is often winding, while we should conceive that two parallel faults of that magnitude would almost necessarily be straight.

The morning continuing quite calm we rowed steadily on, and reached the south-west. extremity of the lake between two and three o'clock. Sulleon then proceeded to cut some of the meat of the venison into long strips, which he hung up in the wigwam on sticks over the fire, and meant to leave it there till we came in with his family. The Indians dry the venison in the smoke in this way till it assumes the appearance of old leather, and then use it without cooking, carrying it with them in their hunting excursions. Sulleon told me that he himself had killed upwards of fifty deer during the last winter chiefly by watching them swim across the lake at par-... ticular points, and then chasing them in his

canoe and stabbing them in the water with a short iron spear, which is always kept in the canoe for that purpose. The English settlers have a more cruel method, as when they catch a deer in the water they break his back with a The animal can then still swim. hatchet. and they drive it before them; but the moment it gets on shore it falls, when they dispatch it. This is simply to save themselves the trouble of hauling it into the boat or towing it after them, and I was glad to see Sulleon join me in expressing abhorrence of such unnecessary When Sulleon had taken what meat cruelty. he wanted we took the bones out of the remainder and packed it up to carry out. We then amused ourselves in firing at a mark and paddling the canoe. This canoe, made merely of birch bark sewed neatly over a light frame of thin wood, looks the frailest of all nut-It will live, however, they say, in a shells. heavy sea merely from its lightness and buoyancy. It was about ten feet long and two feet broad, sharp at both ends and round-bottomed, and I have certainly no wish ever to experience its qualities in a heavy sea or a gale of wind. I was told that Indians had crossed in them

HAP. IV.

vith a n the ettlers catch with a swim, oment atch it. trouble it after oin me cessary at meat the ret. We a mark , made a light all nuty, in a d buoytwo feet ttomed, perience f wind. n them CHAP. IV.]

WET WOODS.

from Cape North in the island of Cape Breton to Cape Ray in Newfoundland, a distance of sixty or seventy miles, part of it out of sight of land; but I should greatly doubt the truth of the statement.

September 6th.—In setting out this morning we were delayed a good deal by getting the boat aground at the mouth of the brook, and having to drag it up into a place of concealment. It was thus half-past seven o'clock before we had fairly got our loads on our shoulders and set off into the woods. The morning was heavy and dull, with a driving fog and an easterly wind, and just as we set off it began to rain. The first plunge into the bushes wetted us to the skin, and was like stepping into a cold bath. Every stick was so wet and slippery that it took us nearly four hours to get through the three miles of wood, being delayed, however, twenty minutes by one of the men dropping his bundle and losing his way. On getting out into the barrens and marshes we found the wind very cold and driving a deluge of rain upon our backs. With great care we managed to keep our guns dry for some time; and coming down on a

little pond we shot a black duck. Presently after we came on a covey of ptarmigan, quite tame, and apparently unwilling to get up; of these we shot three brace. At one o'clock we reached the tilt in the woods where we had slept as we came in. We were now thoroughly drenched. Determined to make a bold push to get back to St. George's Harbour and our little vessel to-night, I only allowed one hour to cook and eat dinner and tea and start again. Accordingly, at two o'clock we were again on our way, and toiled vigorously over the soaked marshes, and through the cold wet woods. We saw abundance of ptarmigan and several flocks of wild geese, but by this time our guns were useless from the wet, and we had no time to spare had they been dry. Between four and five we made a simultaneous halt beside a small brook, and one and all declared we could go no farther without something to eat. We accordingly unpacked some cold venison; and I got out a lump of sugar I had left, and dissolving it in water made one of the most pleasant and refreshing draughts that can be taken on a hard march. Sulleon said venison was the weakest of all meat.

HAP. IV.

sently quite p; of ck we e had v thoake a arbour llowed ea and ock we orously he cold rmigan by this vet, and en dry. taneous and all t someed some sugar I ade one raughts Sulleon 1 meat,

CHAP. IV.] A HARD DAY'S WALK.

meaning that one became sooner hungry again after eating it. Salt pork, he said, satisfied the appetite longer than anything else. In passing over the last two or three miles of march the men began to flag very much, as our bundles and clothes being saturated with wet increased our burdens somewhat. Sulleon also complained of a pain in his stomach from over-fatigue. We kept steadily on, however, and just as it was beginning to get dusk reached the last ridge and the skirt of the last half mile of wood. We had some difficulty in hitting on the little track among the bushes at the skirt of the wood, and had we missed it all our labour would have been in vain, and we must have passed the night where we were. Luckily, however, Sulleon smelt it out, and traversing the woods as rapidly as we could we reached our boat just as it got too dark to proceed any farther. Here we gladly threw down our bundles, hauled the boat into deep water, stepped the mast and bent the sail, and were-soon rapidly drifting down the inlet before a strong east wind. For the first quarter of an hour we were in high spirits, but as the cold wind blew through our wet clothes

н З

the talking and laughing gradually died away, and we sat shivering in the boat in silence. Though wrapped in my blanket and cape, I think I never passed a more wretched time of two hours and a half than this, as, crouched in the stern of the boat, I in vain peered through the darkness to get a glimpse of some light on shore or the form of some land by which to mark our progress. At length we passed into the harbour, struck the side of our vessel, up which I could hardly climb for numbress, and astonished Gaden the skipper with our appearance at this time of night. A glass of brandy all round, however, prepared us for a supper of hot venison; and taking off my clothes for the first time for ten days, I soon slept off the fatigue between the blankets in my berth.

September 7th.—Very busy all day writing out notes, drawing maps, &c. Just by the south-west extremity of the Grand Pond is a large bare round-topped hill, plainly visible from St. George's Harbour, from which it bears due north-east, true bearings. This hill Sulleon called Hare Hill, from the abundance of hares upon it. It must be about 1000 feet in height. None of the land we passed over

HAP. IV.

away, ilence. ape, I ime of hed in rough ght on nich to ed into sel, up ss, and appearbrandy supper thes for off the th. writing by the nd is a visible hich it This hill indance 000 feet ed over CHAP. IV.]

ORIES HILL.

rose more than 400 or 500 feet above the sea, and a road might readily be constructed across it. If necessary at any time, by means of a few canoes, an easy communication might then be kept up by means of the ponds and rivers between St. George's Bay and Hall's Bay. A hill on the south-east side of the pond, about ten miles from its north-eastern extremity, called by Sulleon Ories Hill, is a conspicuous object. The contrary winds and our shortness of provisions would not allow me to visit it, which I regretted greatly, as from its summit Sulleon said the Red Indian Pond might be seen a day's journey to the east, and a very lofty hill forty miles off (by his estimate) in the south-east, which may probably be the Mount Misery or Jamieson's Mountain of Mr. Cormack. Were the western side of the island settled, the banks of the Humber and the north end of the Grand Pond would be by far the most favourable spots for an inland population. The soil is richer, and the inland communication might be greatly extended by means of a few roads between the ponds and rivers.

CHAPTER V.

Raised Beach—Crab's River—A bed of Coal—South side of St. George's Bay—A Storm—Gypsum beds—Red Indians—Adventures with—Their Superstitions—Coal— Wreck of the Onondago—Narrow Channel.

SEPTEMBER 8th.—Sailed from St. George's Harbour, and examined Indian Head and the north shore of the bay. It was a most lovely day, and the chain of hills that sweep from the south-west round the head of the harbour, and pass off towards the north, showed to great advantage, with their patches of light and shade, their sunny peaks and dark hollows.

September 9th.—Landed in Ship Cove. The whole of the north shore consists of low perpendicular cliffs of yellow magnesian limestone, very straight, and with scarcely any indentation. Just east of Ship Cove is another small cove at the mouth of a little valley, HAP. V.

th side s—Red -Coal—

eorge's nd the lovely from rbour, ved to f light rk hol-

Cove. of low n limely any another valley,

RAISED BEACH.

CHAP. V.]

down which a small brook runs out to the sea. The valley is full of clay, mingled with boulders, on the top of the crumbling cliffs of which I found a number of loose, partly decomposed shells. They consisted of Mya arenaria, a species of *Pholas*, and one or two small species of Tellina. The same species of shells are abundant in different parts of the bay, but I did not see any in this cove, the beach of which is covered with large pebbles. For want of a spade I could not ascertain whether the shells were buried in the clay to any depth, and what I found on the slope of the bank might have been brought by birds, and buried slightly by clay washed down by the It was, however, the only spot in rains. which any kind of evidence could be found to show a recent elevation of the coast of any part of Newfoundland which I visited, and here the evidence was uncertain, to say the least of it. The shells generally, on the coast of Newfoundland, are rare, both in species and individuals, and are only found in such places as St. George's Bay, and the few inlets in which there is shoal water, and a sandy or muddy bottom.

In the evening we beat up to the southern shore of the bay, and anchored under a headland, and during the night it blew a very heavy gale of wind from the south.

September 10th.—Went to the mouth of Crab's River, in order to explore for the coal reported to exist on the south side of St. George's Bay. This is a considerable brook, but has only depth of water enough to admit even such a small craft as ours at spring tides. There were two houses near it, in which were English settlers; and we got two men to aid us in warping the Beaufort over the bar into the little cove at the mouth of the river, where, when she was secured, there was but just room to row a boat round her. The cliffs here consisted of soft red and white sandstones, and red and variegated marls. The top of the cliffs, for about a hundred yards in width and a mile or two in length, was occupied by a fine short turf, like that of a sheep-down. At the back of this stood the usual dense wood, but the relative number of the different species of trees was not the same as on the slate rocks. There were more aspens, and other branching trees, and fewer firs and

CRAB'S RIVER.

CHAP. V.]

IAP. V.

hern leadvery

th of coal f St. prook, admit tides. were aid us to the where, room e cons, and of the th and l by a down. dense fferent on the s, and s and larches. The country, in the interior, was gently undulating for some distance, and more like some parts of England than any I had yet seen in Newfoundland. The people, too, seemed more agricultural than in other parts, with poultry and cattle about them. They informed me that the only place in which coal was to be seen was in the banks of a brook about three miles above them, and some miles from the coast.

September 11th.—Soon after daylight we set off in the boat for this other brook, and landed at its mouth. It was a very pretty little spot, with green meadows on each side of it, and two or three neat clean houses clustered under the shelter of a rising bank covered with green turf. Geese were feeding on the grass, ducks and poultry were scattered about, and a few cows and some sheep gave it all the appearance of a pastoral scene at home. There was actually a fence and a stile to get over into a small field with a footpath across it, a sight quite refreshing to the eyes after so many months looking at wild rocks and dreary woods. Mr. Morris, the patriarch of the settlement, came and invited me to sit

down to breakfast with them, when I found plenty of fresh milk, eggs and butter, hot bread, excellent tea, and a snow-white tablecloth. It really seemed a little paradise. Stephen Shears, his son-in-law, who had a house close by, volunteered to "pilot" us up the brook to a place where he had himself From the rising ground behind seen coal. the houses the view was very beautiful. A tract of low undulating land, covered with a rich sea of wood, stretched away into the interior for fifteen or twenty miles, and was backed by a range of blue hills in the horizon that rose towards the south-west, into a still loftier range running to Cape Ray, while towards the north-east they gradually died away, and coalesced with the hills at the head of the bay. The wood was not of the sombre hue so generally seen in the country, but was patched with the light green of the birch, and what they here called the "wych hazel," the "barm," and the "aps." I think, also, there were ash-trees, but could not be sure. The little rich-looking valley of the brook, with its bright waters winding away into the woods, completed a most lovely, and almost English,

CHAP. V.] BROOK NEAR CRAB'S RIVER.

161

picture. We passed over the hill, and descended into the valley of another small brook close by, to the west of the former one. Up this brook we proceeded. Its width varied from 20 to 100 yards, and it was generally shallow, and its bed full of enormous boulders, much rounded. These boulders consisted chiefly of gneiss and granite, and Shears said they were moved and brought down by the ice in the spring. We had frequently to cross the brook to take advantage of the various little banks of shingle or sand. The rest of the journey consisted of a compound of wading and jumping from one slippery block to another. We had, however, no burdens, except a pick-axe and shovel, and a bag to bring away anything we might find. The banks of the brook, at first, consisted of red and white sandstone, and marls dipping north-west, or towards the sea. These marls and sandstones were exactly like the new red sandstone of England; and as they inclined from the country where the coals were said to be, I was marvelling at the exact coincidence of the relations between the two formations in such distant countries, and inclined at once to

IAP. V.

ound · hot ableadise. ad a us up mself ehind 1. A vith a intewas orizon a still while died e head ombre ut was h, and l," the , there The vith its woods, nglish,

set down these red sandstones as new red sandstone. After proceeding about three miles, however, I came upon some perpendicular beds, and after that found all the red sandstones and marls dipping the contrary way, or towards the coal country. After proceeding some distance, these red marls and sandstones began to alternate with dark blue clays containing gypsum, brown sandstones, and conglomerates, and presently with dark grey indurated shale, or clunch. The grey and yellow sandstones and shales then began to preponderate over the red ones, and occasionally a bed of black, bituminous shale was observable. I then began to perceive that the red sandstones and marls composed, in fact, the base, or lower beds of the coal formation ; and, to make a long story short, we came, at a distance of eight or ten miles from the shore, on a bed of coal at the top of a small bank, resting on grey clunch and sandstone. from under which, at no great distance, a bed of red marl cropped out. We immediately set to work with pickaxe and shovel, and after filling our bag with the best pieces of coal, we made a fire on the beach, and had a famous

HAP. V.

red three rpene red trary pros and blue tones, dark grey began occale was at the h fact. ation; me, at m the small Istone, a bed liately d after bal, we amous

A BED OF COAL.

16

CHAP. V.

blaze with coals of our own digging. The coal is of a good quality, and a good deal of it is cannel coal. The bed exposed was between two and three feet thick, but as the top was wanting, it may belong to a still thicker bed. The bank immediately beyond it ended, and thus cut off its further extension, neither was there any appearance of it farther up. Shears said this was the only spot he knew in which. coal appeared at the surface of the ground. There is, of course, no doubt of there being more beds in the vicinity, and of the probability of all the centre of this low district being occupied by a productive coal-field. We certainly cannot tell what the future may bring forth, but at present this coal-field must lie entirely dormant, as, from its distance from the coast, it cannot compete with the exten-... sive coal-fields of Cape Breton and Nova Scotia, now in work. After eating a lunch we set out on our return, and got back just at sunset wet up to the middle, although the day had been a beautiful one. They gave us some tea, and soon after dark we got into our boat, pulled through a rolling surf, and reached Crab's River in about an hour.

September 12th.—Stephen Shears came down this morning, to beg me to write some letters for them, to their friends at home. He had been an apprentice in Devonshire twentyfive years ago, and when about sixteen ran away and came out here. He served his present father-in-law as a hired labourer some time, till he gradually accumulated a little money. He had now eleven cows, three oxen, and a bull, twelve sheep, a house at the brook for a summer residence, another house in the woods for the winter, where he had also a garden: he had also a few roods of ground cleared, which he had sown this summer with French wheat, which, he said, thrived very A few years before he had married his well. old master's daughter. His father-in-law, Morris, himself originally came out as he did, without a farthing, and now they were all happy, comfortable, and independent. The only want which Shears expressed was that of books and schooling, for himself and his children, and he begged me very earnestly, if ever I came that way again, to bring him some. I had none with me, but books of reference on scientific subjects, or I should certainly have

a

b

CHAP. V.] SOUTH SIDE OF ST. GEORGE'S BAY. 165

given him some. He says the snow here generally sets in about three weeks before Christmas, and breaks up in the beginning of April. The climate, during the summer, is very fine, and certainly, while I was in St George's Bay, nothing could exceed the beauty of the weather.

Existing treaties will, I suppose, preclude the regular settlement of this neighbourhood, but as far as its natural capabilities and resources go, St. George's Bay and its neighbourhood is by far the most inviting part of Newfoundland. It is, indeed, the only part in which agriculture could flourish so as to become part of the resources of the country, and is likewise the only part which has any mineral wealth to boast of. Had the western shore of the island been the eastern, it would, before this time, have contained a populous and flourishing community.

At twelve o'clock to-day, being the top of high water, we managed to scrape out over the bar, getting one knock, however, from a hard rock, some great boulder, probably, brought down by the ice out of the river. We then stood out into the bay, for Cape

HAP. V.

came some He entyn ran s presome little oxen, brook in the also a round er with d very ied his in-law, he did, ere all The that of is chilif ever me. I nce on y have

Anguille, but, there being a light wind from the west, did not make much way.

September 13th.-Light breeze from eastsouth-east, with clouds and heavy rain. Doubled Cape Anguille, and entered by a rocky channel into the little harbour about three miles south of it, formed by a small island called Codroy Island. There were two small schooners at anchor there, and a few huts on the island belonging to French fishermen, while on the shore were a few English settlers. It rained hard all day, and the wind gradually increased from the east. After dark it was blowing a gale from the south-east, which seemed to increase every minute. We got out another anchor and about seven the two schooners dragged their anchors, and one of them drifted down upon us, but luckily brought up before she fouled us. As Gaden and I were talking in the cabin, we also began to drift, one of our anchors having loosed its hold. On coming on deck we found it pitch dark, and the wind blowing so furiously that we could hardly stand. I could just make out the outline of the land close by us, and saw, by its apparent motion, that we were

b

n

n

GALE OF THE 13TH.

CHAP. V.]

IAP. V.

from

east-

Dou-

rocky

three

island

small

huts

rmen,

ettlers.

dually

it was

which

le got

he two

one of

luckily

Gaden

began

sed its

t pitch

ly that

make

us, and

e were

drifting rapidly. We were obliged to stoop below the bulwarks, and shout in each other's ears to make ourselves heard. There was no sea, as the wind blew off-shore, but the whole surface of the water was a sheet of white foam, which the blast tore up and shot into our faces, making them smart as if the spray were crystals of salt. We veered away all our cable, and when within fifty vards of the point of the island forming the harbour, the water getting shoal and the bottom more sandy, our anchors again bit well, and we held on. Here we determined to run her ashore, cut away our masts, or even take to the boats and abandon her, rather than be blown out to sea in such a night; and I went to pack up my note-books and other light valuables in case of necessity. We held on here for some time, but swung occasionally in-shore, and presently began to strike heavily. By shifting the yards and the helm we sheered off into deeper water, but still struck once or twice. I turned into my berth at ten o'clock, but left my pea-jacket, with my watch and note-books, ready for a start should it be necessary. Between twelve and one the wind

moderated a little, and at one o'clock, just at high water, the wind suddenly shifted into the north-west. They took this opportunity of getting the vessel back into a safe berth, which they effected with some difficulty. For the remainder of the night the wind blew from the north-west as hard as it had done from the south-east, and we had every reason to congratulate ourselves on being where we were.

September 14th.—The wind a little moderated, but still blowing hard from the north-The channel by which we came in was west. now a wide-spread bed of breakers. Standing on the corner of the little island and looking towards Cape Anguille the sight was magnifi-Long waving ridges of sweltering water, cent. with flickering tops like small mountain peaks, came rolling successively towards the land, rose and curled over when they touched the rocks, and fell in regular cataracts of foam like the falls of some great river. I at one time could count from six to seven of these great ridges of water, for they could hardly be called waves, each two or three miles long, coming in regularly one behind the other. It was not possible to land on the main, as the

b

h

sr

fo

ri

ha

th

ev

CHAP. V.] STORM-GYPSUM BEDS.

CHAP. V.

ust at to the ity of berth, For v from om the o convere. modenorthin was anding looking nagnifir water, peaks, e land, hed the f foam at one of these hardly es long, her. It as the sea curled round each end of the island into the little harbour and caused a heavy surf on the opposite shore. There were several small fishing-boats in the harbour sunk at their anchors.

September 15th.—Fine, with light air from the south-east, so could not proceed to the river which I wished to visit. Found the stock of one of our anchors broken. Landed on the main and examined the cliffs, in which there was a great quantity of excellent gypsum in beds and veins. Heard of a large vessel being ashore near Cape Ray, sails all set, and no one in her. Many boats lost along the coast.

September 16th, 17th.—Wind south-east, so could not get out of the harbour. A schooner from the Magdalen Islands came in that had been out in the gale. They said it was the heaviest they ever knew. Her deck-boat was smashed from end to end by a heavy sea.

September 18th.—Calm. Towed the Beaufort out of the harbour into the mouth of the river, called the Great Codwy River. A large harbour is formed by a long spit of sand across the mouth of the river. At low water, however, most of it is dry, with the exception of VOL. I.

e

V

E

W

tł

se

ca

sa

CO

fir

en

that

m

cit

the

par

the

she

Sto

int

Ind

fur

par

the

the channel of the river, which has a depth of ten or twelve feet. Two or three English families, with cattle, reside on the south side, and one or two Irish, with some pigs, on the north. On the sandy point were three Indian All the men had left the place and wigwams. gone down to the wreck, except two old Indians and a young one, who was a cripple. This young Indian was about thirty, a fine intelligent fellow, with a noble countenance and piercing black eye. About two years ago he had fallen, while carrying a barrel of flour, and his back was so severely injured that he has not been able since to walk without crutches. His wife was an exceedingly pretty woman, with a Grecian countenance, dark but ruddy complexion, and a sweet smile. She spoke no English, and was very modest and They had been married ten years reserved. and had three children. Her husband gave me much information as to the interior of the country, and an animated description of his having once seen a Red Indian fishing in a river in the interior. This was about twelve years before, and since that time he had neither seen nor heard anything of the exist-

CHAP. V.]

P. V.

ı of

lish ide,

the

dian

and lians

This

telli-

and

go he flour,

at he

ithout

pretty k but

She

st and

years

gave

rior of

tion of

ing in

twelve

e had

e exist-

THE RED INDIANS.

ence of the Red Indians, although before his accident he had traversed every part of the western side of the island.

When Newfoundland was first visited by Europeans it was peopled by a race of Indians who, from the colour of their skins and from the red ochre with which they smeared themselves and everything belonging to them, were called Red Indians. They were no doubt the same aboriginal race as the red men of the continent of North America. They were at first friendly, but in process of time a deadly enmity arose between them and the whites, so that neither spared the other. There is too much reason to believe that the greatest atrocities were committed upon these Indians by the rude fishermen who settled in different parts of Newfoundland. They complained that the Indians stole their boats and nets, and they shot them down whenever they saw them. Stories are current too of persons having gone into the interior on purpose to hunt the Red Indians, and shoot them for the sake of the furs and skins they had about them. Thus, partly from actual slaughter, and partly from the best parts of the coast being occupied by

1 **2**

Europeans, the Red Indians seem to have decreased rapidly in numbers. At the beginning of the last century a body of Mic Mac Indians, partly civilized and converted to the Roman Catholic faith, either came or were sent from Nova Scotia, and settled in the western part of Newfoundland. These were armed with guns and hunted the country, making great havoe amongst the game. quarrel soon arose-perhaps on this accountbetween them and the Red Indians; and Sulleon gave me a confused account of a battle that took place between them at the north end of the Grand Pond about seventy years ago. In this the Red Indians were defeated, as they were armed only with bows and arrows, and, according to Sulleon's statement, every man, woman, and child was put to death. About fifteen years ago attempts were made by a society, formed in St. John's, to open a communication with the remainder of these Red Indians, but without success: and Lieutenant Buchan, with a party from a man of war, having surprised and surrounded a tribe of Red Indians, near Exploits Bay, tried to conciliate them, and invited two of them on board his

CHAP. V.] ADVENTURES WITH THE RED INDIANS. 173

vessel, leaving two of his marines as hostages. The Indians, however, escaped, and returning to their encampment, he found it deserted and the bodies of his two marines lying on the ground without their heads. Subsequently to that, one or two women were captured, and one lived in St. John's some years. No Red Indians, however, had been seen in any part of the island for the last ten years, and I believe the last remnant of them have either perished or have passed over to the Labradore. Such, however, is not the opinion of the settlers in the distant outports. While on the Grand Pond my men were in continual dread of meeting the Red Indians, and their feeling towards them may be estimated by their open avowal that if they saw one they should fire at him as if he were a wolf. Their astonishment was really amusing when I told them that, if they did meet one and shot him without provocation, I should do my best to have them hanged on their return to St. John's. They evidently looked upon them as wild animals of a pernicious character.

The Mic Mac Indians inhabiting Newfound-

AP. V.

have egin-Mac to the were n the were untry, e. A unt-1 Sulbattle th end rs ago. as they rs, and, y man, About e by a a comese Red utenant of war, of Red onciliate ard his

land reside chiefly on its western side, wandering from Fortune Bay to St. George's, and thence to White Bay and the Bay of Exploits, living in the winter on the products of the chase, and in the summer joining in the fishery, or getting other desultory employment. Their number probably does not exceed a hundred families, and they bear on the whole a good character. A few of them are worthless vagabonds, and, especially when intoxicated, are not to be depended on; but the greater number are honest, well-meaning fellows, and when well treated are faithful and steadfast. Sulleon and the cripple at Codwy River were men of a superior stamp, both morally and intellectually; and had the latter been well and unhurt, I would rather have had them for companions in the interior than any of the Europeans I met on the coast. They are all Roman Catholics; and Sulleon's daughter having been recently married to a young Indian when I was in St. George's, they had gone across the country to White Bay, a short time before our expedition, to have the ceremony performed by a Roman Catholic priest, who,

CHAP. V.] 8UPERSTITIONS OF THE INDIANS.

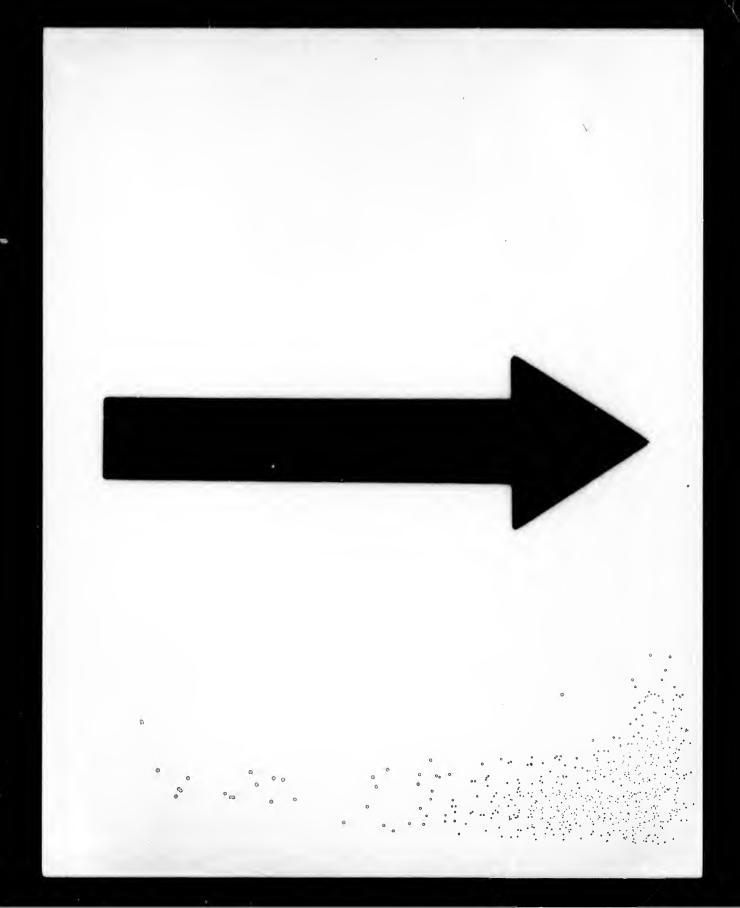
they heard, was travelling upon the north coast of the island.* I suspect, however, that, like most other people, they still preserve some of their old superstitions. Sullcon, for instance, would not allow one of my men to fire at a jay with his gun, as he said the gun would be spoilt, and get gradually worse after killing the jay, until it burst or would no longer shoot straight. He would not give his reason for this notion; and I could see that upon this and several other points he held notions which he did not like to express. From all I could hear they are a very moral people, being especially strict with regard to their women and marrying at a very early age.

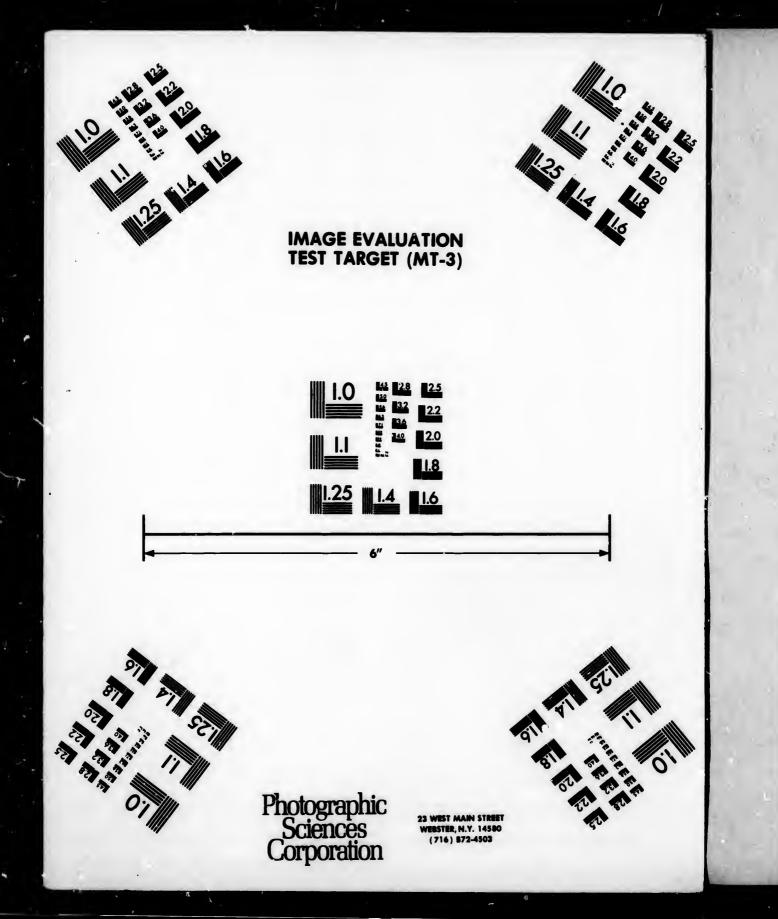
September 19th to 24th.—Detained in Codwy River by contrary winds. Some of the men coming back from the wreck told us she was the Onondago of Cork, loaded with timber. The day after the gale she was seen in communication with a brig, which took out her

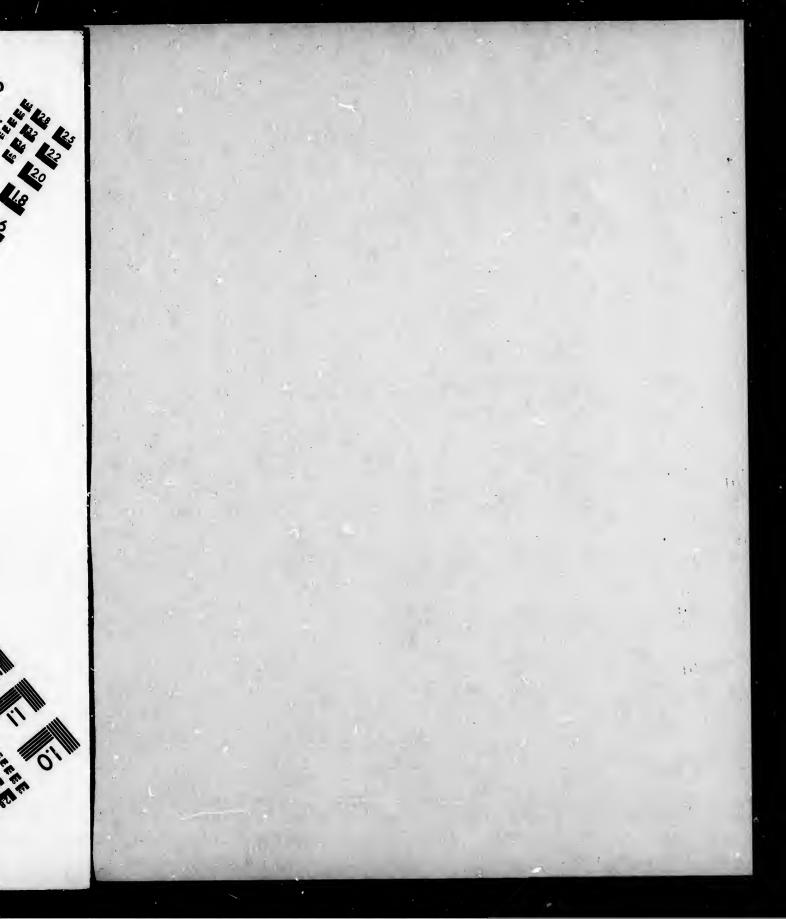
* All the inhabitants of the coast north of Cape Ray, both Indians and Europeans, marry by drawing up papers before witnesses, binding upon each party to have the ceremony performed on the first opportunity that presents itself. As there are neither clergy nor magistrates, this is, of course, their only plan, and is tantamount to the Scotch law.

HAP. V.

wan-, and ploits, chase, ry, or Their ndred good vagad, are nums, and adfast. r were and inell and em for of the are all ter hav-Indian d gone ort time remony st, who,







provisions and crew and let her go, after which she drifted in-shore. I heard reports of coal having been seen by the Indians up Codwy River, and tried to get more exact information and persuade one of them to go as a guide. Several professed to know where it was, and offered to accompany me, but when the time came always drew back. One Indian woman, middle-aged, and apparently intelligent, began talking about the "Indian king." She said that they had a "king," who resided in Nova Scotia, that the whole country rightly belonged to him, and that he must be consulted before any of them dare give me any information. Another said he would go and show me if I would give him a hundred pounds, as I might get thousands or millions. I was told also that an Englishman, named Gale, who lived on the south side of the river, and who had the reputation of being very rich, had strictly charged the Indians to give no information. Those Indians who resided all the year round were sometimes dependent on the English settlers for food, and dare not disobey them and the latter were particularly churlish and uncommunicative, especially old Gale. They

AP. V.

hich coal dwy ation uide. and time man, began said Nova onged before ation. he if I might l also lived o had trictly ation. round nglish them h and They CHAP. V.]

COAL.

feared, it seems, that mines would be established, and that thus the neighbourhood would be regularly settled, and not only their own trade and authority interfered with, but taxes and customs imposed. All along this shore I was looked upon with great suspicion by many of the European residents as a Government agent, and it was believed that my ultimate object was the enforcing taxes and custom-house duties. After being amused for two or three days by vague promises on the part of the Indians to come and show me where the coal was, I was privately assured by Peter, the cripple, that none of them had ever seen the coal themselves, and only knew of it from the report of an Indian, named Morris Lewis, who described it as in a lateral brook of this river, at a distance of about thirty miles. I explored the river for about ten miles, and found a lovely valley between some gently rising ground on the one hand, and the bold and precipitous range of hills running down to Cape Ray on the other. The rocks were the same as those I had seen near Crab's River, and dipped towards the interior of the country, in which direction there is, therefore, no doubt of the

existence of coal. There were several strips of grass along the banks of the river, which had been cut and made into hay, and on some small islands were a few very good potato-gardens, belonging to the Indians down at the point. The day before we left I bought a good dog from one of the Indians for ten shillings. Newfoundland is one of the worst places in the world for getting a good, or at least a goodlooking, Newfoundland dog. In St. John's and its neighbourhood they are the most illlooking set of mongrels that can be conceived. In the more distant ports, however, the breed has been better preserved.

September 24th.—At length we got a slight breath of easterly wind, just sufficient to send us out of the mouth of the river, when a northnorth-west breeze came up, which was also the best wind for sending us round the Cape. Cape Ray is a very conspicuous object at a distance, in consequence of the bold flat-topped ridge of hills that comes down to it, ending in two or three detached conical eleva tions. From the foot of these about a mile of flat ground stretches out to sea, forming the point of the Cape. In a small cove on the

CHAP. V.] WRECK OF THE ONONDAGO.

HAP. V.

ps of had small -gart the good lings. in the goodohn's st illeived. breed

slight o send northso the Cape. t at a at-top-, endeleva nile of ng the n the north side of this point, high on the rocks, lay the wreck of the Onondago. She appeared to have been a fine ship of 700 or 800 tons; her hull seemed not to have sustained much injury, but her masts were now gone, and she was of course stove in below by the sharp rocks on which she lay. Two small sloops, two or three fishing-boats, and several punts lay alongside, and their crews were on shore getting out her cargo, piling the deals and other timber of which it consisted, and loading their own vessels with all imaginable coolness and deliberation. She was evidently considered fair game, and 'first come first served' seemed the order of the day. The dirty little vessels around her put me in mind of a parcel of wolves preying on the carcase of a race-horse.

On passing the Cape there was a very striking change in the aspect and character of the country, but the change was by no means an improvement. The range of hills before mentioned, whose steep north-western face overlooked the rich and apparently fertile country of St. George's Bay, sloped more gradually towards the south-east, into a wild, bare, rugged mass of broken rocks inclining gradually to the

sea, clothed only with moss and small berrybearing bushes, and furrowed in every direction by narrow, and abrupt ravines. This rugged and broken country was evidently continued with the same character beneath the sea. The shore is indented with creeks and inlets in every direction, and a fringe of rocks and rocky islets, two or three miles broad, runs along it. Keeping alongshore we got entangled among sunken rocks before we were aware of it, as the water was quite smooth. A boat just ahead of us, however, left Codwy River a little before us, bound for Port aux Basques; and by keeping a diligent eve upon her motions, and following her winding course, we managed to keep the right passage. Frequently, on looking over the side, we could see rocks a few feet below the surface on each side of us, and in some parts the passage between them was not twenty feet across. Following the boat, we ran into a narrow channel, between a headland of the main and a string of islands, from which there appeared at first to be no outlet. Suddenly rounding a projecting rock, the boat hitherto our guide let fall her mainsail, and, shoving her bowsprit almost against

CHAP. V.] NARROW CHANNEL.

the door of a small wooden house, her owner stepped ashore with a rope, made fast the boat, and was at home. Before we had recovered our astonishment at this sudden proceeding, we had passed the only place wide enough to swing at anchor, and saw a narrow opening out of the channel between one of the islands and the main. Here was another house, and a man and two boys, who told us the passage was safe, and we slipped through a place where half the crew might have leaped ashore on one side and half on the other. We were then in the small harbour of Port aux Basques, and, by the help of the chart and the sailing directions, worked up to a snug berth behind a small island, where we anchored. Just before it got dark we went ashore; and found the land very rugged and very difficult to traverse, in consequence of the thick matting of moss and dwarf bushes. There were no houses here, the few inhabitants living at the channel by which we had come in.

IAP. V.

errvirec-This con-1 the and rocks runs ntanwere 100th. odwy t aux upon ourse. Freld see h side tween owing tween lands, be no rock. maingainst

DEAD ISLANDS.

[CHAP. VI.

a

h

tı

is

п

Se

is

W

th

CHAPTER VI.

The Dead Islands-George Harvey-Want of Lighthouses -A Ball-La Poile Bay-Arrival at St. Peter's-The Cod Fishery-St. Lawrence-Reach Placentia-Visit Trepassée and Ferryland, and return to St. John's.

SEPTEMBER 25th. — A beautiful morning. Examined the rocks in the neighbourhood of the harbour, which were nothing but gneiss and mica slate, the cliffs glittering with crystals and the bright flakes of mica. In the middle of the day a light wind sprang up from the west; so, against Gaden's inclination,

sailed. About three P.M. the weather looked suspicious, and a long sea began to roll in from the south. The shore was so rocky and dangerous, that it was necessary to look out for a harbour for the night; and seeing a punt, with a man fishing, near the Dead Islands, we stood in for him, and he piloted us through a cluster of small, low, rocky islets, into a long narrow channel, between a larger AP. V1.

thouses s-The .--Visit s.

rning. ood of gneiss crys-In the o from on, looked roll in ky and ok out eing a Dead bted us islets, larger

CHAP. VI.]

DEAD ISLANDS.

island and the main. This was a comfortable and secure harbour, but having shores wild, bare, and rocky, consisting of gneiss and granitic veins. Evening rainy and unpleasant; but just before sunset it cleared off, and we took the boat up a small river that came in at the back of the islands. For about half a mile it was several feet deep, with shallow perpendicular banks of bare rock crowned with moss. We then came to a small fall, above which the brook was a mere rapid, winding through a bed full of boulders of all sizes and shapes. It traversed a wild and desolate-looking little valley, with rocky precipices here and there on each side of it, and the whole face of the country was broken into rugged little hillocks and ravines. Occasionally, at the foot of some higher precipice than usual, two or three firtrees might be seen trying to struggle into existence. All the rest was bare rock or lumps of moss and scrubby straggling bushes. The view seaward was equally remarkable: numberless islets ran along the coast, the chief one of which was half a mile long, steep and woody, but the majority were mere bare rocks, frequently

in the shape of a low dome, with just one tuft of bushes growing on their tops.

September 26th.—Fine morning, but the wind blowing from the south-east right against There are three or four families scattered us. uo the seislets, whom we visited. They seem tolerably comfortable, and very simple and open-hearted, but rather afraid of strangers. Near the eastern entrance of the channel, in a house rather better than the others, lived George Harvey, who had been born and bred on this coast. He was about sixty years of age, and had a large family of sons and daughters, mostly grown up. He had been instrumental in the course of his life in saving some hundreds of people from wrecks. A few years ago the brig Despatch, full of emigrants, struck, in a heavy gale, on a rock about three miles from his house. He and one of his daughters, then aged seventeen, and a son of twelve, went off in his punt through a heavy sea, and by great exertions brought off the whole of the crew and passengers, consisting of 163 people. He established the people about his house, and shared the whole of his

CHAP. VI.]

GEORGE HARVEY.

HAP. VI.

e tuft

t the gainst ttered seem e and ngers. iel, in lived l bred ears of is and d been saving A few grants, about one of a son bugh a ght off consistpeople of his

provisions with them, until word could be sent to La Poile, and a vessel sent down to carry them away. They stayed with him a fortnight or three weeks, and his stores were so completely exhausted, that himself and his family were compelled to live chiefly on salt fish, with neither bread, flour, butter, nor tea, during the whole of that winter.

On information of his conduct reaching St. John's, the then Governor, Sir T. Cochrane, sent him 100% and a gold medal, with directions to wear the latter on holidays, such as the King's birthday, &c. This medal, as well as the Governor's letter, the old gentleman took great pride in showing us. On the 14th September, 1838, he again saved twenty-five men, the crew of the ship Rankin, 650 tons, Alexander Mitchell, master, belonging to the house of Rankin and Gillmore, of Glasgow. She struck on a rock and went to pieces, the crew hanging on to an iron bar or rail that went round the poop. He fetched them off by six or eight at a time in his punt through a heavy surf, and kept them till they could get on to La Poile. He showed me some documents left him by the master of the

vessel, but complained that he had as yet received no recompense either from the master or the house she belonged to. He and some more men, he said, were once employed five days in burying dead bodies cast ashore from a wreck, from which circumstance, I believe, arose the name of "The Dead Islands," or, as the French call them, "Iles aux Morts." In short, the whole coast between La Poile and Cape Ray seems to have been at one time or other strewed with wrecks. Every house is surrounded with old rigging, spars, masts, sails, ships' bells, rudders, wheels, and other matters. A ship's galley lay at Port aux Basques. The houses too contain telescopes, compasses, and portions of ship's furniture. I heard of several chain cables along the coast, which the people had purchased from wrecks, on the chance of raising them; and I believe they drive a regular trade in old rope and other matters, which are bought by the little schooners that run during the summer alongshore. Mr. Anthoine afterwards told me, at La Poile, that there was scarcely a season (meaning an autumn) but he had four or five shipwrecked crews thrown on his hands

J

HAP. VI.

et remaster some d five e from elieve. s," or, forts." Poile ie time house masts. l other ort aux scopes, rniture. ng the d from h; and in old ght by he sumerwards rcely a ad four s hands

CHAP. VI.] LIGHTHOUSES WANTED.

to maintain and send away, he being an agent of Lloyd's, as well as the only merchant in the neighbourhood.

I should be unwilling to obtrude my opinion on matters of which I have no professional, and but little practical, knowledge;-but surely it seems reasonable that a great commercial nation such as England should not suffer the borders of the great high-road to Canada and her North American possessions to be thus strewed with the property and bodies of her subjects. A lighthouse on Cape Ray, with a large bell or gun to be used in fogs, together with a smaller lighthouse, and a pilot or two, either at Port aux Basques, the Dead Islands, or La Poile, as a harbour of refuge, would be the means of great good. There is no want of good harbours along the coast, but their entrances are generally narrow, and only to be found by those thoroughly acquainted with the channels between the rocks and islands.

Old Harvey told us that the gale which occurred while we were in Codwy Harbour was the heaviest he had known for at least twenty years, and that several small vessels had been lost along the coast. In the afternoon he came

on board to see me, and have a glass of grog; and then nothing would do but we must all go back, and have a dance at his house along with his daughters. Accordingly, we left his punt alongside our vessel, and took him with us in our own. One of my men played the flute, and we got up a rude kind of country-dance, while he regaled us with grog and tobacco. He had written a song, which, at his request, one of his daughters sang to an old "Down, derrydown" sort of a tune. It was a description of the wreck of the Despatch, embodying most of the remarkable incidents that occurred while he was fetching off the crew and passengers. The verse, as may be supposed, was rude enough; but it gave great satisfaction. Then one of my men, Bill, the flute-player, sang a song, likewise of his own composition, and descriptive of an adventure of his own, in which it appeared that he, with the rest of the crew, had abandoned a water-logged vessel off Ferryland; but, after rowing about all night, were very happy to get on board of her again the next morning. This was likewise received with considerable applause. Old George Harvey then told us of his once having seen a

b

t]

iı

h

E

la

S

S

0

SI

ra

V

tı v HAP. VI.

grog; st all along eft his vith us flute, dance, o. He st, one derrytion of most while ngers. rude Then ang a nd dewhich crew, Ferry-, were in the ceived e Harseen a CHAP. VI.] HORS

HORSES AND BEARS.

horse, in some settlement in Fortune Bay, and described to his family the size and appearance of this remarkable animal. The people wished, he said, to seduce him into mounting on its back; but "He knew better than that," although one fellow did ride it up and down several times. Then, turning to me, "We have some large beasts, Sir, sometimes, in this part of the country. I don't know whether you ever heard of them ;---we call them bears, Sir." On which I assured him that I had not only heard of, but had actually seen several bears in my lifetime, although not at large in the woods: with all which he seemed especially interested. I fear the reader will, at first, hardly feel disposed to believe that there are British-bor subjects, speaking the English language, in the oldest of our colonial possessions, to whom the horse is a strange animal. Such, however, is the fact. It was now eleven o'clock; and for some time there had been a storm of thunder and lightning, and heavy rain and wind, raging outside. Taking advantage of a temporary lull, we set off to return to our vessel. The wind, which had previously blown from the south, shifted into

south-south-west, and began to blow very hard. We accordingly hauled our little vessel close under the lee of the island, and made fast by a line on shore. About two in the morning the wind shifted into the west, blowing a furious gale right down the channel; we were then obliged to haul off from the shore, and let go the other anchor.

September 27th.-The morning broke dark and stormy, with a fierce gale blowing from the west, driving clouds of spray along the water, and heaving up a tremendous sea on the rocks and islands at the western entrance of the channel. The boats alongside were full of water, from the mere "spoon-drift," or spray caught by the wind from the surface of the sea. Luckily, no swell could reach us where we were, and our anchors held on well. About twelve the sun broke through the clouds, but pale and distempered; and it was not till the afternoon that the wind moderated sufficiently to enable a boat to pull against it, even in smooth water. Old Harvey then came off to us, and said that, when he got up in the morning, he ran down to the beach, fully expecting to see us ashore. He was very anxious about

HAP. VI.

hard. close at by a ng the furious e then let go

e dark g from ng the sea on ntrance ere full r spray the sea. ere we About ids, but till the iciently even in e off to e mornpecting s about CHAP. VI.]

FISHING DOG.

two of his sons, whom he was expecting back from St. George's Bay, where one of them was gone to get married. He fears they may have been caught in the gale of last night.

September 28th.—The wind has shifted into the south-east again, not permitting us to stir, especially in such a heavy sea as was now rolling outside. A thin, short-haired, black dog, belonging to George Harvey, came off to us today. This animal was of a breed very different from what we understand by the term "Newfoundland dog," in England. He had a thin tapering snout, a long thin tail, and rather thin but powerful legs, with a lank body, the hair short and smooth. These are the most abundant dogs of the country, the long-haired curly dogs being comparatively rare. They are by no means handsome, but are generally more intelligent and useful than the others. This one caught his own fish. He sat on a projecting rock beneath a fish-flake, or stage, where the fish are laid to dry, watching the water, which had a depth of six or eight feet, and the bottom of which was white with fish-bones. On throwing a piece of cod-fish into the water, three or four heavy clumsy-looking fish, called in New-

I

c t

t

h tl

F

t] is

c t]

iı

la

с Т

a

M

tl

n

g

C.

tl

a

n

foundland "sculpins," with great heads and mouths, and many spines about them, and generally about a foot long, would swim in to catch it. These he would "set" attentively, and the moment one turned his broadside to him, he darted down like a fish-hawk, and seldom came up without the fish in his mouth. As he caught them, he carried them regularly to a place a few yards off, where he laid them down; and they told us that in the summer he would sometimes make a pile of fifty or sixty a day, just at that place. He never attempted to eat them, but seemed to be fishing purely for his own amusement. I watched him for about two hours; and when the fish did not come, I observed he once or twice put his right foot in the water, and paddled it about. This foot was white; and Harvey said he did it to "toll" or entice the fish; but whether it was for that specific reason, or merely a motion of impatience, I could not exactly decide. The whole proceeding struck me as remarkable, more especially as they said he had never been taught anything of the kind.

September 29th.—Sailed to-day with a light wind from the west. The land east of the Dead

CHAP. VI.

ls and nd gein to tively, side to nd selnouth. ularly them ner he r sixty mpted purely im for id not s right This d it to it was tion of The kable, r been

a light e Dead CHAP. VI.]

LA POILE BAY.

Islands preserves the same bleak and rocky character, but gradually rises higher towards the east. About Garia Bay a ridge runs into the country with three high bluffs on it, the high range of Cape Ray being still visible over the intermediate country. We entered La Poile Bay in the afternoon, and anchored in the first cove on the larboard hand, where there is a small settlement, and a considerable mercantile establishment belonging to Mr. Anthoine, a native of Jersey. Mr. Anthoine was in England, and his son very busy; but the latter came on board with Mr. Reid, the custom-house officer, and invited me ashore. There were two brigs and several schooners at anchor.

September 30th and October 1st.—Very unwell with a severe cold and sore throat. Took the boat to the head of the bay, and went nearly round it. It is composed of a coarsegrained granite, of porphyry and quartz, and of chlorite and other slates. The head of the bay is rather more wooded and fertile-looking than the surrounding country, but the eastern shores are craggy and broken, and form a mass of the most irregular, rough, bristling hillocks I ever VOL. I.

saw, rising from a table-land of some 200 or 300 feet in height. I saw here three St. John's newspapers, being the first news I had had of the rest of the world for these two months. We heard also news from the Cape. In the last gale, that of the 27th, all the vessels lying in Codwy harbour, consisting of a sloop and two French schooners, were driven ashore and wrecked, being beaten entirely to pieces in about two hours. A large brig was lost, with all hands, about half a mile above the spot where we saw the Onondago. She was seen in the morning to have anchored about a mile from shore, and inside a shoal on which the water broke; her crew were clinging to the vards and rigging. As the wind was dead on shore, all assistance was, I suppose, out of the question. At last a sea struck her, and she fell on her beam ends, but righted again. Another sea struck her, and she fell over, but not so far. The next heavy sea, however, turned her clean over, and she lay bottom upwards. Then the windlass appears to have been torn from her deck, and she drifted in-shore, righted as she approached the land, and was cast into a sandy cove, where, had the crew run her ashore at

CHAP. VI.

200 or John's had of nonths. the last ying in and two re and ieces in st, with he spot vas seen t a mile hich the to the dead on t of the she fell Another ot so far. er clean hen the rom her l as she a sandy shore at

ANOTHER SHIP WRECKED. CHAP. VI.]

first, they might have been saved. The next day six dead bodies were picked up on the beach, and one was found hanging out of the stern windows of the cabin. Such was the account brought to La Poile; but as nobody who could read had yet seen the wreck, her name was unknown. We were peculiarly lucky in being on the right side of the Cape in each of these gales, and each time in a tolerable harbour. No news had been heard of Harvey's boat, but a boat had been seen coming out of St. George's Bay the evening before the gale, which was thought to be the one in question; and unless they had taken warning in time, and run back up the bay, it was feared they were lost, and that the bridal party had perished in the week of their wedding.

The little settlement of La Poile seemed very comfortable, and the people happy, kindhearted, and hospitable, although I was too unwell to participate in their enjoyments. Mr. Anthoine's is the chief mercantile establishment between Cape La Hune and Cape Ray. Twenty or thirty years ago there were not more than three or four families within that space. Now, however, there are several

C

a

fe

b

W

0

h

u

V

d

e

d

b

tł

a

W

a

is

01

CE

in

te

tu

h

W

inhabitants in almost every cove, and Mr. Anthoine told me that since he came to La Poile he has been obliged to double his stock almost every year in order to supply the increasing population.

October 2nd.-Sailed at daybreak this morning in company with a schooner belonging to Mr. Bagg of La Poile. A lovely day, with a cool breeze. There has been a sharp frost every night for the last few nights. The character of the country continues much the same, but becomes bolder as we proceed to the west. The hills gradually rise higher, but are still bare, craggy, and precipitous; and the country, for the most part, is the very picture of desola-Mr. Bagg, in his schooner, led the way, tion. and when off the Bruger Islands he suddenly rounded-to, and proposed to run into harbour. The wind had veered to the south, and the sky began to look dirty. We followed him, therefore, through a narrow channel, among many small islands and low sunken rocks, and anchored in a small cove called Grandy's Cove. As we meant, if possible, to sail early the next morning, I landed just at sunset, to get some specimens of the rock, when a man came down,

CHAP. VI.

to La is stock the in-

s mornging to with a p frost ie chae same, e west. are still ountry, desolaie way, ddenly arbour. the sky theremany nd an-Cove. ie next t some down.

CHAP. VI.] NATIVE GEOLOGIST.

and, after looking at me with evident wonder for some time, at last asked me if I wanted ballast.

October 3rd and 4th.—Detained by contrary winds blowing fresh from the south-east. Called on Mr. Cox, who has a small "store" here, and had married Mr. Bagg's daughter. He gave us a good dinner of pork, and several kinds of vegetables, with milk and wine. A regular dinner was becoming rather an event in my existence, as I had now for some time lived on dry ham and rather musty biscuit, my potatoes being all gone, and no supplies to be got on this barren coast. Near Mr. Cox's house was a schooner ashore, half buried in sand: she was laden with coal from Sidney to St. John's, and was driven on land in the first gale. There is a considerable population, inhabiting forty or fifty houses, which are scattered about the central portion of the Burger Islands.

October 5th.—Sailed at four in the morning, with the wind from the north. I had intended to have visited Fortune Bay on my return, and also Placentia and St. Mary's. We had, however, lost so much time, from contrary winds and other accidents, and it was getting

so late in the season, that I determined on passing Fortune Bay and going direct to St. Peter's, and thence to Placentia. The wind blew fresh from the north-north-east, very cold, and knocked up a troubling sea, that upset my cabin-stove, and so deprived me of a fire. We did not anchor in the outer roads of St. Peter till half-past eight.

October 7th to 10th.—Four most lovely days, perfectly clear, warm, and without a breath of wind. We were accordingly detained in St. Peter's, momentarily expecting a breeze to enable us to proceed. For this detention, to tell the truth, I was not greatly sorry. I was most hospitably entertained by Messrs. Atherton and Thorne, who supplied me with hosts of recent American newspapers and several new books. Two or three of the French officials were also very kind; and M. Renaud, the treasurer, showed me a collection of shells from the Great Bank. Among these shells was a terebratula, which seemed to me of a different species from any I had A new commandant had arrived from seen. France, in place of the one I had formerly made acquaintance with. As, however, I was

CHAP. VI.

ed on to St. wind y cold, set my . We . Peter lovely

ly deting a his dereatly ned by pplied papers of the nd M. collecmong eemed I had l from merly I was

CHAP. VI.]

ST. PETER'S.

in momentary expectation of sailing, I was too idle to dress and wait on him. St. Peter's was now very busy, and the inner harbour crowded with brigs and schooners, the former loading with fish to take to the West Indies, the latter chiefly from the neighbouring shores, purchasing French wines, spirits, and groceries, which they probably intended to smuggle into the English settlements. Atherton and Thorne's large store was full all the day. In the outer roads were several large vessels. One was an English ship from Miramichi, called the "Henry," bound for Liverpool. She was dismasted in the gale of the night of the 13th, and put into St. Peter's to refit. Her commander said he never before was out in so heavy a gale. Indeed I found in the newspapers accounts of wrecks and disasters over the whole of the western Atlantic from Bermuda to Halifax and the Gulf of St Lawrence. Two English ladies were on board the "Henry," one of them with two of her children, and they said they could never forget the misery of that night. Many of the inhabitants of St. Peter's were busy sending off not only their fish, but themselves, on their return to France. Only

a small proportion of the people engaged in the fishery remain during the winter, the rest return to France; and the French merchants are bound to bring out a certain proportion of fresh hands among their crews every year. A bounty of about five or six shillings per quintal* is paid by the French government on all fish caught by their own fishermen. The French fishery is accordingly conducted on a very different plan from the present English fishery. Large vessels with regular crews are employed, every man is numbered, and a regular system adopted, both in the actual catching of the fish and in the curing it. These vessels fish mostly on the banks, far out of sight of land, and remain there till they have completed their Their shore fishery also, on the N.W. cargo. coasts of Newfoundland, is conducted on the same regular system, a certain number of boats being under the control of one merchant, and sending in their cargoes regularly to his establishment as the fish are caught, to be there These boats are, I believe, manned by cured. crews who have regular wages paid them.

* A quintal is 100 pounds weight of dry or cured fish, which fish when fresh would weigh about 300 pounds.

CHAP. VI.]

THE COD-FISHERY.

The English fishery is, on the contrary, entirely uncontrolled and unstimulated by bounties. Every man catches fish for himself or for others, according to his inclination or his capital. He either hires himself out as a servant, for regular wages or a share of the produce, or he builds himself a boat and catches what he can, selling the produce to his merchant, or whomsoever will purchase it. The English fishery is accordingly now essentially a shore-fishery, and carried on by the regular inhabitants from their own doors, as it were. As might easily be supposed from these circumstances, occasional squabbles occur on' the shores in the neighbourhood of St. Peter's, sometimes between the French and English fishermen, and sometimes between their masters and the authorities. The French are frequently in want of bait, more especially of capelin in the capelin season: they are apt, therefore, to run over to the English shore with a fast boat and a few nets, and help themselves to a little of it. This the majority of the English settlers of course disapprove of, as depriving them of their natural advantages: there

201

ar. A intal* all fish French very ishery. oloyed, system of the ls fish land, d their N.W. on the f boats it, and s estae there ned by them. red fish,

ds.

HAP. VI.

red in

ie rest

chants

tion of

к З

are not wanting, however, some of them who for the sake of profit will undertake to supply the French with capelin of their own catching, and this leads to dissensions among them-Again, many of the French fishermen selves. are willing to buy codfish, either cured or uncured, from the English, in order to get the bounty on it from their own government. This the French authorities naturally oppose, and enforce stringent regulations against the English fishermen. The English custom-house officers moreover look on St. Pierre as a nest of smugglers, or at least as a constant source of temptation for the English settlers to become smugglers: in which, by the way, they are not far wrong. On this smuggling-trade neither the custom-house officers nor the respectable merchants look with favourable eyes. For all these reasons the presence of a man-ofwar of each nation some time during the fishing season is absolutely necessary, and without the salutary fear of such visits the mutual jealousy would perhaps find vent in actual outbreaks and open quarrels. As it is, however, a tolerably good understanding seems

CHAP. VI.] GREAT ST. LAWRENCE.

to be kept up, more especially among the lower orders of each nation, who probably find their account in it.

October 11th.—After several shifts and changes, the wind this afternoon settled into a pleasant breeze from the west. We accordingly set sail, having Mr. R. Thorne, who lived at St. Lawrence, as a passenger. At ten o'clock P.M. we were off Cape Chapeau Rouge, immediately to the east of which are two small inlets called Great and Little St. Lawrence. We accordingly stood in, but it was so dark we could not make out the entrance at first, and at last got into Great St. Lawrence, instead of the other inlet, in which was Mr. Thorne's residence.

October 12th to 16th.—We were again detained at St. Lawrence during this time by a succession of contrary winds, during which I was hospitably entertained by Mr. J. T— and his lady, who reside at Little St. Lawrence together with two younger brothers. Their house is very prettily situated on a small peninsula jutting into the inlet, and connected with the main by a pebble beach. This beach is evidently of recent formation, being thrown

CHAP. VI.

n who supply ching, themermen or unet the This e, and Eng--house a nest source to be-, they -trade he ree eves. an-ofg the and ts the ent in it is, seems

up by the indraught of the tide during the south-west gales, and the peninsula was once an island. The country around is wild, but picturesque, having the rocky heights of Cape Chapeau Rouge in view on one side, and those of St. Margaret and St. Anne on the other: these are round-topped craggy hills, each rising about 800 feet above the level of the sea. The rest of the country is broken, rocky, and undulated, varied with the usual proportion of marshes, barrens, and stunted woods, and ornamented with a few fine lakes or ponds, of which there is one about a mile long near the north-eastern extremity of the harbour. The lake empties itself by a stream running between rocky banks, and terminating by a picturesque little waterfall. This waterfall has cut back about 150 yards in the course of time through a hard slate rock, forming a ravine with perpendicular walls, up which the tide now flows to the foot of the falls. One day one of the men came across to me from Great St. Lawrence with intelligence that a leadvein had been discovered. On going over I found quite an excitement, and at least twenty people hammering and digging at the rock.

HAP. VI.

g the once d, but 'Cape those other: rising . The d unon of d ords, of ar the The g bea picl has ftime avine e tide e day Great leadver I venty rock.

CHAP. VI.]

VEIN OF LEAD.

The rock itself was a kind of sienite, consisting principally of red feldspar with interspersed crystals of quartz. A vein two or three inches wide was in one part filled with small crystals of fluate of lime, and among these were some little cubical crystals of galena, and a coating of a greenish hue that might be green carbonate of copper. To satisfy the people, I had a good deal of the rock pulled down, and the whole affair shortly ended, the vein closing and losing all its crystalline contents. It is just possible that more mineral veins and of better quality might be found in the neighbourhood, but no other indications existed, and none appeared in the cliffs, while the interior of the country was covered with moss and wood.

October 17th.—Morning fine, calm, and hazy, but towards noon a light breeze sprang up from the west, and we left St. Lawrence for Mortier Bay, where I heard of limestone and marl having been found. The shore is bold, with rocky cliffs and many indentations. We passed close by Burin, in which, from the number of houses, there seems to be a considerable population, and anchored in Mortier

harbour. Mr. H----, the stipendiary magistrate of Burin, had a house here, and came to invite me ashore. The next morning he took me in his whale-boat into Mortier Inlet, a short distance farther up the coast. We passed through a narrow passage between a small inaccessible island, called Crony Island, and It was scarcely wide enough for the main. our oars, but a schooner is said once to have darted through it when chased by an American privateer, and not able to fetch the principal entrance of the inlet. There were several families residing in various parts of this inlet, in pretty and picturesque situations, and some spots showed a considerable degree of fertility. The different rocks occurring even in this little space were very numerous, as may be seen by referring to the report. There were one or two thin beds of impure limestone and some red indurated marls, and "cornstones" in red sandstones, more like the bottom parts of the coal formation in St. George's Bay, than anything I had seen on the eastern side of the island.

October 19th.—Sailed for Placentia, but about noon the wind headed us, and we made

CHAP. VI.]

ANDIERNE.

for the island of Andierne or Oderon. The western side of Placentia Bay is full of islands, many of which are low, and surrounded by sunken rocks and reefs. We had a group of these on each side of us, as we made Cape Jude; and shortly after, passing through a narrow entrance between two small steep islands, we ran into a harbour in another small island, and, narrowly escaping a sunken rock about its centre, we anchored in a snug berth in an inner cove. This was Andierne, and we had scarcely anchored before a north-east wind sprang up, that, had we been outside, would probably have sent us back to Mortier or Burin. On the north side of the little harbour of Andierne is a tolerable house and very extensive warehouses and stores : these are now only half occupied by a young man who was trying in some measure to re-establish the very extensive trade that must once have existed there. One or two brigs were at the wharf, and several small houses were scattered about. We were detained here a day by a north-east wind, and I was hospitably entertained by Mr. H---on shore.

October 21st.—Sailed with a north-west

HAP, VI.

nagisne to took let, a assed small and h for have Amethe were f this , and ee of even erous, eport. pure , and e the 1 St. n the

, but made

wind and a most lovely morning for Placentia. The air was very sharp and the sky clear, and as we sailed along I was amused by watching the rapid changes of form assumed by the various islands on each side of us as they came upon the horizon. I concluded-though, having broken my thermometer, I had no means of testing it-that the sea was of a higher temperature than the air, and that therefore there was a stratum of air just above the surface of the sea (which was quite smooth) that continually varied in temperature, and consequently in density and the quantity of moisture it contained. Such a state of things would, I should suppose, produce the optical phenomena alluded to. Although perfectly clear round about us, the sea near the horizon seemed to be covered with a dense white fog, smooth and bright as water, in which the distant islands were both reflected and distorted. Two or three headlands were transformed into a row of narrow pillars, constantly shifting their proportions, and some of the rocky islands assumed all kinds of queer shapes just before they disappeared. It seemed almost like a narrow stripe of a phantasmagoria. About three P.M. we ran AP. VI.

entia. , and hing the came havins of temthere ace of cononseisture ıld, I mena ound ed to h and lands vo or ow of opored all disapstripe e ran

CHAP. VI.] GREAT PLACENTIA.

into the harbour of Great Placentia. This is a small bight, with very bold and lofty headlands on the north side, and a low point on the south side. The highest part of the north side is covered by the ruins of a fort, called the Castle, and several old guns are lying about, one or two having fallen half-way down the precipitous cliffs. From underneath these lofty cliffs at the head of the bay, a pebble beach sweeps' out, and is separated by a channel, not more than 150 yards across, from another similar pebble beach coming from the opposite side of the bight. On the point of each of these beaches are the ruins of a strong fort. The channel leads into the inner harbour, which divides into two arms: one, called the northeast arm, about ten miles long, and nearly straight, and the other the south-east, with a very winding course of about five miles. The south-east arm nearly surrounds a steep rocky piece of ground which was once an island, but is now connected by a long pebble beach with the mainland on the south side of the harbour, blocking up what about sixty years ago was the entrance of the south-east arm. There is another pebble beach stretching from it to the

mouth of the channel, on which the town, if it can be called such, is built. It was once a very considerable place, being the French capital when they held possessions on the island, and even under the English was formerly much more important than it is now. It consists of a number of small houses huddled together, and one or two of a better class: it has a Roman Catholic chapel, well attended, and a church. but neither minister nor congregation belonging to it. Mr. B——, the surgeon and magistrate, called on me, and invited me ashore.

October 22nd.—Mr. B—— breakfasted with me, and we then set out to walk to Little Placentia, a distance of about five miles. It was a fine morning with a sharp frost, and to my great delight I found a regular road made. Actually a road! with bridges across the brooks, fifteen feet wide, and mostly covered with gravel. It was rough enough, to be sure, and in some places boggy, and if it had not been for the frost, would have been sufficiently muddy; but I saw none of its inconveniences. I could again step out with a free stride, could raise my eyes from the ground while I walked, and had the free use of my limbs. I never AP. VI.

, if it a very apital l, and much ts of a r, and oman urch. elongnagisre. d with Little s. It and to made. s the overed e sure, d not ciently iences. could alked, never CHAP. VI.] A WALK ON A ROAD.

appreciated the advantage of a road before : it was really like liberty after imprisonment, and at the best parts of it I felt very much inclined, like the Irishman, to walk backwards and forwards in order to make the most of it. Little Placentia, as well as Great Placentia, stands on what was once an island, being connected to the main by a beach of large pebbles. It is a straggling place on the low side of an inlet, with bold rocky hills on the opposite side. We borrowed a punt and examined some of the rocks, which consist principally of slate, and after being caught in a snow squall, we dined with a gentleman residing in the town as a merchant, and returned to Great Placentia in the evening. The snow had turned to rain, and it was blowing hard from the west.

October 23rd, 24th, 25th.—Detained by westerly winds with heavy rain and miserable weather. The entrance of the inner harbour being so narrow, and the arms so extensive, it may easily be imagined that the tide, even with a lise of only six feet, causes very rapid currents at the ebb and flow. When near low water, indeed, it is almost impossible to stem the current of either the ebb tide or the flood with

any strength of wind. The ebb tide is of course the strongest, and also the longest, and the ebb from the south-east arm, in consequence of its many windings, is three-quarters . of an hour later than that from the north-east arm: there is consequently a dangerous eddy, and for a short time contrary currents on each bank of the channel. Even with a fair wind. therefore, a vessel is obliged to wait for the tide; and, from the embayed position of the place, one wind is required to take her out of the harbour, and another when she arrives at Cape St. Mary, to take her round to St. John's. At twelve o'clock on the night of the 25th the wind shifted into the northeast, and the tide turning at the same time, we sailed.

October 26th.—It blew very hard last night; and on looking out on my cabin at daylight this morning, I found a pretty scene of confusion. The stove and all its pipes had capsized; my chair, clothes, and books had got adrift, and together with two or three cups, plates, and other articles, were piled in confusion on the cabin-floor. We were now, however, round Cape St. Mary, with a light

TREPASSEE.

CHAP. VI.]

AP. VI.

is of , and onsearters 1-east eddy, each wind, r the f the r out rrives o St. ht of orthe, we

ight; /light conl capd got cups, connow, light

wind at north-north-west. The day turned out fine, and at noon we were close in with the east side of St. Mary's Bay, passing near St. Shots. This place, a small rocky cove or bay, is the terror of mariners on this coast. The currents are very variable and deceitful, and frequently set with deadly strength right upon this shore, sweeping up the east side of St. Mary's Bay. Not a season passes but, at some time of the year, there is a succession of wrecks just at this spot. Now, however, it was calm and quiet enough; and we sailed past under the steep cliffs of Cape Freels and Cape Pine, and then ran up into the harbour of Trepassée. This is a pleasantlooking place, the land having a gentle slope on all sides towards the harbour, and being comparatively bare of wood. There is a considerable number of houses, and among them one or two of a good size and appearance. The best belongs to Mr. S----, who, I regretted to find, was from home. He is clerk of the court to the southern circuit, and was now absent with the judge, who was on circuit, and whose vessel we saw pass the mouth of the harbour in the evening. They had left

Placentia shortly before we arrived there, had since been to St. Mary's, and were now gone on to Ferryland.

October 27th.—Rainy and disagreeable, with variable winds from the southward. As the crew had been on deck all the night before, and it was Sunday, I gave them holiday today, instead of continuing our route, but had reason most grievously to repent it.

From October 27th to November 9th.-A weary period of thirteen days, the wind blowing from the north-east without intermission. The weather was mostly wet, with fogs, and occasional storms of snow and heavy rain. Even in the fine intervals. I dared not stir far from the harbour, lest a favourable change of wind should occur. I once or twice determined to set out on foot, but the people whom I consulted said the brooks between Trepassée and Renows would not be fordable, except after a day or two of fine weather, and this we never had. I had, moreover, no fancy for wading through several brooks, up to my middle in ice-cold water, if it could be reasonably avoided. Mr. S---'s absence deprived me of all companionship to relieve the tedium

CHAP. VI.] DRIVEN ON SHORE.

HAP. VI.

e, had gone

e, with As the before, lay tolt had

h - Ablowission. s, and rain. tir far nge of deterwhom passée except his we cy for to my easonprived tedium of the time, although Mrs. S— exercised all the hospitality she could in the absence of her husband. Indeed, without her kind assistance, in supplying me with books, and allowing me to join her tea-table in the evening, I know not how I should have survived this period of dreary inaction. Of the rest of the inhabitants, not one came near us.

On November the 2nd the wind had been blowing very hard all night, and in the morning increased to such a gale as caused our vessel to drag her anchors, and slowly and deliberately drift ashore. Luckily, she settled on a small beach of pebbles, in the only place where it was possible to avoid having her bottom knocked in by sharp-pointed rocks. Here, after a few thumps and heaves, she quietly settled down among the pebbles; but as the harbour was two miles long, there was a sufficient swell in the direction of the wind to dash over her sides, and pour bucketsful of water into the cabin and hold. Even in this uncomfortable position, no one from the adjacent houses came to our assistance; and I was told, I know not how truly, that there were those on shore who, having made money

by wrecking, cared not how soon we went to pieces, provided it gave them an opportunity of making anything by us. Luckily no ultimate harm was done, and the next day we got the vessel upright, heaved the ballast out of her, and, taking advantage of a high tide on the night of the 5th, floated her off. On the 7th and 8th the harbour gradually got full of vessels, brigs and schooners, waiting for a fair wind for St. John's.

November 9th.—At length the wind came up from the south-west, and we all beat out of the harbour and sailed alongshore with a beautiful day and a fair wind. The land about Cape Race is comparatively low and bare of wood, with a steep cliff of about fifty feet in height, and deep water close in-shore. From Cape Ballard to the northward the land gradually becomes higher to Cape Broyer, a fine bold headland, 400 or 500 feet high. As it got dark the wind became lighter, and off Ferryland it sank to a calm. We accordingly towed into Ferryland harbour, and anchored for the night.

November 10th.—Perfectly calm this morning. Ferryland is a pleasant place, with a AP. VI.

nt to unity ultiy we t out ı tide On ot full for a came out of beauabout are of feet in From

From gradune bold it got Ferrytowed for the

mornwith a

FERRYLAND.

CHAP. VI.]

good road along the cliff, and several large and good houses. The road is continued each way from the harbour, and towards Aquafort is sound and in good condition. The scenery around is varied and picturesque, the bold headlands, cliffs, and rocky inlets of the seaview harmonising well with the dark woods and hills of the land. At noon, when we were expecting a breeze to enable us to proceed, the everlasting north-easter again sprang up right in our teeth. To avoid a repetition of our Trepassée adventure, with perhaps a worse result, we got into a sheltered little cove, on the south side of the harbour, called the "Pool."

November 10th to 15th.—Again did the wind, during these five days, blow furiously and pertinaciously from the north-east, bringing snow and frost, rendering it impossible to stir by sea, and almost impracticable to move about on shore. I was, however, very kindly and hospitably treated by several resident families; and though becoming very impatient, and being extremely anxious to receive letters and intelligence, the tedious and wearisome delay was at length terminated.

On the evening of the 14th, I had just devol. 1.

termined to set out to St. John's on foot, when the wind seemed inclined to change, and on the 15th a breeze sprang up from the southwest at twelve o'clock. We accordingly left Ferryland; and about eight o'clock at night, in pouring rain, we had the satisfaction of entering the harbour of St. John's, and I shortly after landed on one of the slippery wooden wharfs, and reached at length my lodgings.

CHAP. VII.]

DR. STUWITZ.

AP. VI.

when d on outhy left night, if ennortly coden gs.

CHAPTER VII.

Arrival at St. John's and meeting with Dr. Stuwitz—Christmas Amusements—Description of a Newfoundland Settlement—The Fishery—Habits of the Planters—Character of the Natives—Politics—Fogs of Newfoundland.

On my arrival at St. John's, I found residing there Dr. Stuwitz, a Norwegian, Professor of Natural History in the University of Christiania. He was travelling at the expense of his government, to investigate and collect specimens of the natural history of the northern part of America, and had commenced with Newfoundland. He intended during the winter to visit St. Pierre, Fortune Bay, and the southern coast of Newfoundland, and to return to St. John's in the spring, time enough to accompany the annual sealing expedition, which leaves that place about the beginning of March. As I also wished to see the ice-fields which are visited by the sealers, in order to examine

whether they ever contained boulders of rock or other matters, I agreed to accompany him. In the meanwhile I spent the winter in St. John's, intending to be ready in May to set out again on my coasting survey, and examine the rest of the shores of Newfoundland in search of mineral wealth and productions. During the latter part of November and the first twothirds of December there was dull disagreeable weather, with occasional snow-storms and frost. interrupted by thaws. Stuwitz sailed, on the 8th of December, for Fortune Bay, in an open boat, with a little cuddy at each end, in which it was just possible to stow a bed, leaving barely room enough to sit or lie down.

During the latter part of December, and the whole of January, the weather was beautiful, the air clear, with sharp frost and snow on the ground, but no very intense cold. The harbour was never once frozen over, although the brooks and ponds gradually became fast. This was the season of general holiday. The lower orders ceased work; and, during Christmas, they amused themselves by what seemed the relics of an old English custom, which, I believe, was imported from the West of EngVII.

rock him. St. t out e the ch of r the twoeable frost, n the open which aving d the atiful, on the harhough

e fast.

hrist-

eemed

which,

Eng-

The

CHAP. VII.]

MUMMERS.

land, where it still lingers. Men, dressed in all kinds of fantastic disguises, and some in women's clothes, with gaudy colours and painted faces, and generally armed with a bladder full of pebbles tied to a kind of whip, paraded the streets, playing practical jokes on each other and on the passers by, performing rude dances, and soliciting money cr grog. They called themselves Fools and Mummers. The merchants and higher classes shut up their books and neglected their various employments, and amused themselves with sleighing parties to various points where the roads were open; while a general series of dinner parties commenced, varied now and then by an evening party and a dance. There was an amateur theatre, the profits of which were devoted to charitable purposes, and a performance took place once a fortnight, in which their several parts were well sustained both by the actors and the There were, moreover, two public audience. balls, for charitable institutions, that were well got up and numerously attended. In short, there was no lack of amusement, till the preparations for the sealing voyage began, towards the middle of February, to draw off the

attention both of masters and men to the more serious business of life.

This winter was remarkably mild; the thermometer in the town never, I believe, sank below zero; and once or twice in the month of February the weather became so warm, that the snow melted on the hills, and a regular thaw took place. The temperature of the air on these occasions could hardly have been less than 50° Fahrenheit, though, as I had lent my last thermometer to Professor Stuwitz, I do not recollect the precise point at which I heard that it stood.*

I cannot, perhaps, find a better opportunity than this of throwing together a few observations on some of the more remarkable facts connected with the trade and productions of the country. The first thing that strikes a stranger on entering a harbour in Newfoundland is the abundance of what are called the fish-flakes and stages, together with the wooden wharfs and the great dark red storehouses.

* Daily observations on the height of the barometer and thermometer have been taken by Mr. Templeman, of the Colonial Office, for seven years, but I regret that I have mislaid his published statement. The lowest degree of cold experienced was, I believe, -18° . The coldest month is February. CHAP. VII.]

FISH-FLAKES.

The fish-flakes consist of a rude platform, raised on slender crossing poles, ten or twelve feet high, with a matting of sticks and boughs for a floor. On these the fish are laid out to dry, and planks are laid down along them in various directions, to enable the persons who have the care of the fish to traverse them. The surface of the ground being everywhere so rugged and uneven, this device has been resorted to in order to get a sufficiency of flat space; and in a populous cove or harbour the whole neighbourhood of the houses is surrounded by these flakes, beneath whose umbrageous and odoriferous shade is frequently to be found the only track from one house to the other. The stages are of stronger construction than the flakes, and are generally in the shape of a small pier jutting out into the water, consisting of a platform of poles laid close together, side by side, and nailed down to a strong framework that is supported by stout posts and shores. At the head of the stage are generally two or three poles, nailed horizontally against the upright posts, forming a rude ladder, up which it is necessary to climb from a boat in order to get on the stage. These

nore

thersank th of that gular h less t my I do heard

unity ervafacts ons of kes a ounded the ooden ouses. ter and the Comislaid experi-

bruary.

are frequently the only landing-places in a harbour. The central part of the stage is roofed over, either with boards or boughs, and here it is that the important operation of splitting and salting the fish usually takes place. Besides the flakes and stages, there is generally ret of rough wooden wharfs, supported on piles, and floored with boards, at the back of which are great wooden buildings, some for the reception of cured fish, and others for all kinds of The outside of these buildings merchandise. is painted according to the taste and fancy of the owner, but usually of a dark dull red. Now if the reader will picture to himself, in addition to all this, a few brigs and schooners at anchor in the harbour, and a multitude of small fishingboats, varying in size from a two-oared punt to a half-decked schooner-rigged craft of ten or fifteen tons; -a broken rocky shore, with a stunted wood and little patches of cleared and cultivated garden-ground ;- one or two largesized wooden houses, painted white, belonging to the merchants, and a number of unpainted wooden cottages scattered here and there at all possible angles with each other, perched upon rocks and hidden in nooks, be-

CHAP. VII.] A NEWFOUNDLAND SETTLEMENT.

longing to the fishermen :----if, I say, he can associate all these things in his fancy, he will have before him a tolerably correct notion of a Newfoundland settlement. Of course, in the larger places, more especially in St. John's, these elements are overpowered and thrown into the background by others of more imposing character. Large stone houses, goodsized churches, chapels, and court-houses: shops built of wood and painted white, a tolerably regular street, and a road or two, mark the seat of greater wealth, and a more numerous population. Even in St. John's, however, fish-flakes are by no means entirely absent, though they are confined to the south side of the harbour, and to a small nook, bearing the euphonious appellation of Maggoty Cove.

About the beginning of May all the population are on the alert, preparing for the fishery, laying in stores of summer provisions, and hooks, lines, nets, clothes, and the rigging of their boats. Towards the middle or end of May the first shoal of herrings, called by the natives the spring herrings, appear. These are immediately caught in nets and used as bait for the cod fish. In the middle of June the

r 3

AP. VII.

in a oofed ere it g and esides e ret piles, which ie rends of ldings ncy of Now dition hor in shingpunt of ten with a d and largeelongf une and other, s, be-

capelin come in and last to the middle of July; and with them commences the height of the fishery. Every man, woman, and child is then fully employed. A married man having a family usually goes out with his sons, takes his bucket full of capelin for bait, and rowing to the fishing-ground, generally a mile or two outside the harbour, anchors and commences fishing. Each person in the boat has two lines about twenty-five fathoms long, with two or more hooks. These he flings one on each side of the boat, the end of the line being made fast to the thwart. Feeling each occasionally, the moment he strikes a fish, he hauls him in, flings him down in the boat, baits the hook, and throws out his line again. When they get what they call a good spurt of fish, each person will sometimes be fully employed hauling in one line after the other, as fast as he can bait them and throw them out again. When this happens, an hour or two suffices to fill the boat, which then sails away with her cargo to the stage-head. Here the fish are forked out of the boat with a kind of boathook or pikel, the prong being stuck into the

AP. VII.

le of eight and man h his n for l, ger, anson in ve fa-These ie end hwart. nt he s him hrows t they h will n one h bait When to fill h her sh are boatnto the

CHAP. VII.]

THE COD-FISHERY.

head, and the fish thrown up on to the stage much in the same manner as hay is thrown into a cart. On the stage are usually the females of the family, or a man or two assisted by females, as the case may be. The two most skilful of these are called respectively the header and the splitter. The business of the first is to cut the fish open across the throat and down the belly, and pass it to an assistant, who taking out the liver drops that into a tub on one side, and tearing off the head and entrails throws them down on the other side. The liver is preserved to make oil, and the head and garbage drop into the water which flows underneath. The fish is then passed to the splitter, who by a dexterous movement cuts out the backbone from the neck nearly to the tail, and thus lays the fish entirely open and capable of being laid flat on its back. This is the most important part of the operation, and a goods plitter always commands superior wages at a merchant's establishment. When split open, the fish are salted, laid in piles to drain, washed and salted again, and finally laid in the sun on clear days to dry and harden. While thus exposed they require much attention, and the women

are constantly looking after them, laying them up in round heaps with the skin outwards at night or on the approach of rain, in which state they look very much like small haycocks. Towards the end of July and the beginning of . August, the capelin leave the shores, and the young squids or small cuttle-fish succeed them in myriads and supply their place. These are caught and cut up for bait, being a very favourite food of the cod; and when their season is over these are succeeded by the "fall herrings," as they are called, or the autumnal herring-shoals. This is in September, which may be looked on as the close of the fishery. During the whole season the shell-fish, both of fresh and saltwater, are an excellent bait for the cod; and sometimes food is in such enormous abundance, that the fish get gorged and refuse all In such case a jigger is resorted to, an baits. implement I have already described as a plummet of lead armed with hooks, and drawn quickly up and down in the water, attracting the fish by its motion, and striking them as they swim around it. The jigger, however, is looked upon as objectionable, and ought only to be employed in cases of necessity, as it

P. VII.

them rds at state ocks. ng of d the them se are ourite s over s," as hoals. ed on whole salt-; and abunse all to, an blumlrawn acting em as vever, ought , as it

CHAP. VII.]

THE COD-FISHERY.

wounds more fish than it catches. I do not know the amount ever caught by a man with a hook and line in a single day, but it must sometimes be enormous, as it is stated by them as a cause for their devoting their whole time to it that they have the chance every day of catching 51. worth of fish. Now cod-fish at present is not more than 15s. a quintal when dry and ready for exportation, and a quintal of dry fish is made from about three hundred weight of fresh or "green" fish, consequently 5% worth of fresh fish would be very nearly a ton weight. To get this quantity a man must catch 224 cod of an average weight of 10 lbs. each, or a greater number of less weight in a day; and this, from what I have seen, I think by no means an impossible occurrence, and I have no doubt it sometimes takes place. A family of five or six active individuals in a good summer may thus make fish of the value of from 50l. to 100l. currency. Young and single men either join together, or hire themselves out at regular wages or for a share of the produce, either to their own neighbours or to the merchants, the wages being generally 20%. for the summer, with rations. Lastly, many fa-

milies in some of the outports, instead of "*making*," or curing, their own fish, bring it as it is caught to the merchants' stores and stages, where it is cured by his own men.

In some parts of the coast, where the water is sufficiently shallow for the purpose, the cod-fish are now caught in seines or other This operation requires more capital nets. to commence with than the mere boat and hooks and lines of the common fishermenz It is therefore chiefly pursued by the merchant, or by the richer and more considerable of the "planters," and a great jealousy exists on the subject in some places. Some people even go so far as to say that all nets should be prohibited, as destroying the chance of Setting aside the diffithe poorer class. culty, however, of such a prohibition, there are some places, as about Greenspond and Cape Freels, where the net is used almost exclusively; and little cod would be caught without it. It is obvious, moreover, that the use of the net is advantageous to the trade at large, as shoals, or, as they are called, "schools" of fish, may sometimes be seen sweeping alongshore that refuse to bite at HAP. VII.

ead of ring it es and water e, the other capital at and ermen merlerable exists people should nce of diffithere d and almost caught at the trade called, e seen ite at

CHAP. VII.]

THE COD-FISHERY.

all; and, but for the net, would escape altogether. Besides there seems such an incalculable abundance of the fish, that there will always be enough to hook, enough to jigg, enough to net, and more than enough to go away. One calm July evening I was in a boat just outside St. John's harbour, when the sea was pretty still, and the fish were "breaching," as it is termed. For several miles around us the calm sea was alive with They were sporting on the surface of fish. the water, flirting their tails occasionally into the air, and as far as could be seen the water was rippled and broken by their movements. Looking down into its clear depths, cod-fish under cod-fish, of all sizes, appeared swimming about as if in sport. Some boats were fishing, but not a bite could they get, the fish being already gorged with food. I speared one great fellow with the spike of the boathook; but there being no tail to it, he got away; and, as far as I could see, that was the only fish touched. Had the ground been shallow enough to use nets, the harbour might have been filled with fish.

The nature of the connection between the

merchants and the settlers, fishermen, or "planters," as they are called, is peculiar, and is now somewhat complicated. When the fishery was first embarked in by the English, it was conducted much as the French fishery is now. Vessels of a large size came out every year for the summer, and were compelled to bring the whole of their crews home in the winter, and take out a certain proportion of fresh hands every year. At that time the Bank fishery was the most important branch; and the fishery alongshore little attended to. Gradually the country became thinly settled along the coast, and at length was recognised as a colony, and a governor appointed. Still the connection between the fishermen and the merchants continued much as before. The merchants were men of large capital, and each had his regular planters, who were either his hired and bound servants, or had been such. and were entirely dependent on him for sup-The large mercantile establishments, plies. then in comparatively few hands, were scattered along the coast; each establishment had a regular crew "shipped," and bound down by articles of agreement; and the neighbourAP. VII.

olantnd is shery t was s now. ar for g the r, and hands ishery d the Gradualong ed as a ill the d the The d each her his a such. r supments, e scatnt had down hbour-

CHAP. VII.]

THE COD-FISHERY.

ing planters, whether bound or not, had no other market than the next merchant's store, either to take their fish to, or procure provisions and goods from. Every man in the neighbourhood was down in the merchant's books for almost everything he had; little hard cash passed, but each account was balanced by the fish or labour of every man during the season. As, however, the merchant fixed the price of the fish he bought, and also of the goods he sold, there was considerable probability of the ultimate result being in his favour. From the great facility, moreover, of procuring credit with his merchant for anything he needed or wished for, the careless fisherman frequently ran in debt to a greater amount than his summer's work would pay off. In winter he must either get provisions on credit or starve, and his debt must be increased before he could commence his summer's work to clear it off. The idle and dishonest ran away, or refused to pay: this was a loss to the merchant, who, to cover the losses from bad debts, put a higher price on his goods; and thus the good were obliged

to pay for the bad. With such a system, even with honest intentions on both sides, the natural consequence must be, that each merchant or agent held his neighbourhood in a species of vassalage, and had more power over his dependants than it is safe to trust to the will or caprice of any man. The settlers, on the other hand, became careless and improvident: they lost the feeling of independence, and that never-failing spur to exertion, the hope of acquiring it. This system, too, involved great temptations to dishonesty on both sides; and if the open evasion of a debt on the one side was the most flagrant, I am not sure whether the silent overcharge on the other was not the most fraudulent and pernicious. The close of the war, and consequent fall of the price of fish, led to the breaking up of some of the large mercantile establishments; others failed from various circumstances; the increasing and more stable population drew people with smaller capital to set up stores in a smaller way, and opened the door to competition; and the larger houses concentrated their business in St. John's, or a few of the principal places, and supplied the

AP. VII.

, even he narchant species er his ie will on the ident: d that ope of l great s; and ie side her the e most of the ish. led hercanvarious stable capital opened houses 's, or a ed the

CHAP. VI1.] THE COD-FISHERY.

merchants in the out-ports, or any persons who would pay for their goods, either in cash, fish, or oil. Lastly, the number of small peddling schooners trading along the coast, frequently stepping in between the merchant and his planter, and buying the fish from under his nose, as it were, acting in concert with the other causes, gradually broke up the old system, while political and religious differences completed the alienation between the fishermen and the merchant. Most of these circumstances were in themselves evils, and all have been bitterly complained of; but as, on many occasions, great and general good arises out of many and partial evils, these changes also will, I believe, ultimately be productive of good, and establish the trade of the country on a far more stable and healthier system than before. In the neighbourhood of St. John's, and the whole of Avalon, the old system may be said to have almost entirely passed The fisherman, if honest and indusaway. trious, may carry his fish to any one he chooses; and though he cannot fix the price at which it shall be sold, as the merchants

fix that by common consent from the state of the foreign markets, he has still the great benefit of competition in the choice of the provisions and goods he is to buy. When once he has acquired a boat, a house, fishinglines, and provisions for the season, he has the power of being independent, and need not owe a farthing. One or two years' industry, backed by a little good luck, will give him these; and five years' work, at most, ought to place him on the road to honest independence. Annihilate, as far as possible, the system of credit, and educate the rising generation (which is now being done), and the people of Newfoundland may be as happy and prosperous a race as any under the sun. The value of the dry cod-fish alone exported every year from Newfoundland is, on an average, about 400,000*l*., while the total value of the exported productions in fish, oil, and skins is upwards of 700,000l. This, from a population of 70,000 or 80,000, proves the extent and value of their resources, especially when we take into consideration the quantity of fish consumed in the country.

CHAP. VII.

e state e great of the When fishinghe has d need ars' ink, will t most, honest oossible. e rising and the happy he sun. xported an avel value bil, and from a ves the pecially uantity

CHAP. VII.] LIFE OF A PLANTER.

To resume, however, with the usual course of labour of a planter and his family. In some places, they remove at the close of the fishing season, with their families and furniture, from their summer residences, into more sheltered and woody districts, where fire-wood is more abundant, and the materials for making oars, punts, staves, hoops, &c. may be had for the labour of cutting them. Others employ themselves in hunting, in shooting wild-fowl, ptarmigan, which they call partridges, or deer, or in trapping martens, foxes, otters, and other animals, for their fur. The latter employment, however, except in very remote settlements, is seldom resorted to; and its place is supplied in Avalon and the north coast by the sealing expeditions. In some favoured spots, namely, at the mouths of the principal brooks, salmon-fishing is followed during the summer, by one, two, or more families; and in all places, besides the cod-fish, the dog-fish is caught for the oil extracted from its liver; and the herring and capelin are sometimes cured, as well as used for bait. There is a whaling establishment in Fortune Bay; and

I have often wondered, from the abundance of whales and grampus on the northern shore, and more especially in Trinity and Bonavista Bays, that no whaling speculation has been there set on foot.

For the statistical details of Newfoundland, I must refer to Mr. Montgomery Martin's work on the statistics of the colonies, and to a little volume in the Edinburgh Cabinet Library, in which a very fair account is given of Newfoundland; not entirely accurate in minor points, but, upon the whole, good.

It is an ungrateful task to turn critic on the characters of a people among whom one has lived, and of whose hospitality one has partaken. I can, however, assert that the Newfoundlanders are simple, honest, industrious, goodnatured and hospitable people, and have the virtues of all hardy races exposed to the toils and dangers of an adventurous life. Some of them are, no doubt, fond of rum; but though, during Christmas, or in holiday times, they may occasionally be "fou for weeks thegither," the mass of the

CHAP. VII.] CHARACTER OF THE NATIVES.

people are not habitual drunkards. Many are tee-totallers of old standing. The Roman Catholic part of the population, more especially, have an old custom called "cagging," taking a vow, that is, before the priest, not to touch rum or spirits for a year or two, or for their whole lives, or while they are on shore, &c., and these vows are scrupulously adhered to. Of late years, excited by elections, and the instigations of a few turbulent spirits and by the old party feelings and enmities imported from Ireland, there have been one or two outbreaks at St. John's and Carbonear; and some acts of private or public vengeance have been perpetrated, to the extent of maiming the person. Scenes quite as bad have taken place at elections at home, more especially, I believe, in Ireland; but they naturally produce more excitement in a scattered and usually tranquil population.

One point in the character of most of the inhabitants of Newfoundland seems to be common to the whole of North America, namely, the eager inquiry after news, and the propensity to exaggeration and invention, to use the most polite terms. It is really

CHAP. VII.

undance n shore, onavista as been

undland, Martin's lies, and Cabinet count is ly accuie whole,

critic on hom one one has that the st, induspeople, races exin advento doubt, thristmas, ionally be ss of the

astonishing how news of the most trifling matters, especially if dashed with a little scandal, flies about, not only in St. John's, but along the coast to the most distant settlements. Reports of the most ludicrous nature,-ludicrous for exaggeration, even if they have any foundation in fact,-gain instant credence. It seems to be a stain on a man's character if ou coming into a harbour he has not a budget of news; so that if he knows none, he immediately draws on his imagination. The seal hunters, and the furriers in the country, make a point of giving false information as to the results of their expeditions; and they were, once or twice, quite angry with me for telling the truth on these points. "Sure, sir, what's the use of letting them know what we've got?" "But what's the use of telling a lie about it?" "Faix! and it's no lie; what call have they to be asking about it?" The consequence of this indifference to truth is a bad one. Malicious sayings, and tale-bearings, reports of private conversations, and remarks with illnatured emphasis or additions, and all the petty malice of scandal, are rife in all the settlements I visited; often introducing the

CHAP. VII.] CHARACTER OF THE NATIVES.

AP. VII.

rifling scans, but ments. -ludive any ce. It r if on idget of imme-The seal y, make s to the ey were, or telling r, what's 've got?" bout, it?" ave they uence of e. Malieports of with illd all the h all the acing the most bitter private dissensions into communities that might otherwise be happy and united. The first society in St. John's is imitated in this matter by the humble fishermen in the most retired out-harbour, in a manner that to the unprejudiced observer scems the most severe satire upon them.

241

The point most deficient, however, in the character of most of the lower classes of the inhabitants is a want of manly independence They are easily led, and and self-reliance. always look for guidance; being ready to follow any one who will take the trouble of thinking and deciding for them. This feeling has resulted, in the English part of the population, from their habit of depending upon and looking up to their merchant for everything; and the same effect has been produced amongst the Irish from the implicit reliance they place upon their priest. It is evident that, where this feeling of dependence exists, there can only be a negative character, for without some degree of self-reliance and self-decision, a man may do little wrong, but neither is he likely to do any positive good. I be-VOL. I. Μ

lieve, however, that these pernicious influences are on the decline; and that mercantile competition and early education will gradually elevate the character of the people of Newfoundland.

I have already alluded to their propensity to take advantage of the calamities of their neighbours, during fires and shipwrecks. They universally reason in this way: "If I don't save these goods, they will be lost: now I may as well have them as the sea or the fire !" My own men I found constantly talking in this way when speaking of a wreck; and certainly, when a vessel, entirely abandoned, is driven ashore, and neither her name nor owners are known, the reasoning seems fair enough. It is probably in this way that a lax feeling has originated; and, when once prevalent, it is not unlikely to lead to various infractions of the rights of property. But this feeling is already on the decline in the more populous parts of the island; and the noble examples which the merchants and inhabitants of St. John's have afforded to the people at large cannot but have their effect. While

CHAP. VII.

luences e comadually f New-

opensity of their s. They I don't now I he fire !" lking in and cerloned, is nme nor ems fair hat a lax nce prerious in-But this the more he noble inhabithe people While

CHAP. VII.]

POLITICS.

I was in the country, there were several instances of shipwrecked crews, and large bodies of emigrant passengers, not merely clothed, fed, and taken care of, but refitted, their losses partly compensated, and themselves forwarded free of expense to ports near their places of destination. In proportion to its size and wealth there are few places in any part of the world where larger and more frequent subscriptions for charitable purposes are from time to time raised than in St. John's.

Of the political state of the country I shall forbear to speak at any length. There is now, unhappily, very considerable bitterness of party spirit; but what the cause may be no There are no political one seems able to tell. principles involved in the disputes: indeed, I cannot call to mind having ever once heard a political principle stated, either publicly or privately, while I was in the country. The old nicknames of Tory and Whig are bandied about, and there are dissensions between the Roman Catholics and the Protestants; but the sole feelings involved are, it would appear, certain conventional prejudices, and the strug-

м 2

gle for personal or party power, influence, and emolument. The whole population is British, both actually and in thought and feeling: they are all loyal subjects of the English Crown; and the idea of separation from the mother country has never entered into the head of any, even the most violent among them. On the whole, I believe that if the points of difference could once be fairly understood and expressed, and if the two parties could agree among themselves as to the distribution of the public offices, their quarrels would die away simply for want of anything further to dispute about. Their political arrangements, therefore, can hardly be of sufficient general interest to call for further notice in this place.

It would be hardly fair, perhaps, to class fogs among the productions of this country; but political obscurities lead naturally in this place to speak of the fogs for which Newfoundland is so well known. These fogs are certainly most remarkable. They prevail generally during the summer months, June, July, and August. They do not originate on shore, but at sea, and more especially in that part of HAP. VII.

ce, and British, g: they yn; and country y, even e whole, ce could sed, and ng themne public y simply nte about. fore, can est to call

, to class country; lly in this Newfounds are cerwail geneune, July, e on shore, hat part of CHAP. VII.]

FOGS.

it which washes over the Great Bank of Newfoundland. The Gulf-stream, sweeping along the eastern coast of North America, strikes off, about the latitude of New York, towards the north-east, and reaches the southern edge of the Great Bank; but the boundaries of the stream are indefinite, and it advances farther towards the north at one time than at another. From Baffin's Bay to Davis's Straits a great current runs towards the south, sweeping along the coast of Labradore. This current perplexes and renders dangerous the navigation of the Straits of Belle Isle, whence another current flows out of the Gulf of St. Lawrence, and after washing the north-eastern coast of Newfoundland, traverses the northern edge of the Great Bank, varying in power and extent according to circumstances. The tract of sea between these two currents and near their junction must, of course, be subjected to considerable eddies, changing in power, extent, and direction, according to variations in the Such eddies render the sea two currents. south of Newfoundland and between that country and Nova Scotia dangerous to the navi-

gator, as he is uncertain in what direction, and at what rate, he may at any time be drifted by them. It is doubtless to the meeting of these two currents, one charged with ice, and the other warm from the tropics, on the Great Bank,* and the shoals about it, that the fogs are chiefly due. On the southern shore of Newfoundland a dense white fog prevails throughout the summer, whenever the wind does not blow from the north or west. This fog is low, and does not reach far into the country, as frequently on ascending a hill two or three hundred feet high the sun is found shining brightly overhead. Even on the low ground small breaks or open patches sometimes disclose the bright sun for a few minutes, but it is soon again shrouded by the dense white vapour. These fogs are not unhealthy, nor very unpleasant to the senses, and they rarely extend so far as the Gulf of St. Lawrence, St. George's Bay, or the western shore of Newfoundland. All along the southern

* The Great Bank has a depth varying from sixty to fifteen fathoms. Forty fathoms may with great probability be given as its mean depth. HAP. VII.

rection, ime be e meetd with pics, on bout it, outhern fog preever the or west. into the hill two is found the low es someminutes, he dense nhealthy, and they St. Lawtern shore southern

rom sixty to t probability

CHAP. VII.]

FOGS AND MIST.

shore they are very prevalent, more especially in Placentia Bay, and the neighbourhood of St. Pierre; but around St. John's, on the eastern side of the island, they may frequently be seen out at sea, while the land is basking in sunshine. Sometimes a strip of sea, about a mile broad, forms a belt around the shore, within which the fog does not penetrate, so that vessels suddenly emerging from the fog have found themselves in a clear atmosphere within a mile of the shore. The appearance of a vessel coming thus through a wall of fog is described as most singular, her jib and then her foresails being seen to emerge before her mainmast comes into sight. I have often, too, been struck with the appearance of the narrows when a light easterly wind has been blowing. Overhead, in the harbour, and on the landward slope of the south-side hills the sun has been shining brilliantly, while in the gorge of the narrows the fog might be seen boiling and rolling in huge white fleecy folds, creeping along the water, or curling in wreaths of mist up the sides of the hills, and gradually dissipating as it advanced. Sometimes the

crest of the ridge of the south-side hill was crowned by a long low line of fog that kept rolling over it and pouring down upon its sunny sides without advancing an inch, the whole of the vapour being dissolved as soon as it came upon the warm air above the heated rocks. If, however, the wind blew harder from the east, or more especially the southeast, the fog was driven in more rapidly: it gradually advanced and prevailed, spreading over the harbour, and enveloping the whole country in its dense mantle. At night, when the ground is cold, the fog settles upon the land; and remains as long as the wind blows from the east or south-east. The moment. however, the wind shifts into the west, or north, the fog is driven out to sea again, and retires to its stronghold and permanent domain, the Great Bank. With northerly or westerly, or at St. John's with southwesterly winds, the atmosphere is always clear; but during the summer months, a shift to the south or east will bring fog in greater or less time, according to the strength of the In Bonavista Bay, and along the wind.

AP. VII.

ll was t kept on its h, the soon as heated harder southidly: it reading e whole nt, when pon the nd blows moment, west, or a again, ermanent northerly h souths always ns, a shift n greater th of the long the

CHAP. VII.]

FOGS.

northern shore of Newfoundland, there is comparatively little fog, the only wind that brings it being a north-easterly, or a very strong easterly wind. I have no doubt the interior of the country of Newfoundland would always be found free from fogs, except in long-continued southerly and easterly winds.

CHAPTER VIII.

Return of Dr. Stuwitz, and departure with him to the Ice-Appearance of the Ice, and difficulty of getting through it-Capture of the first Seal-Grand slaughter amongst the Seals-Icebergs-Aurora Borealis-Capture of a Shark — Description of the different species of Seal found near Newfoundland-Effects of a Swell upon the Ice-Return and arrival at St. John's.

TowARDS the end of the month of February, 1840, I began anxiously to expect the return of Professor Stuwitz, of whom I had heard no intelligence during the winter. In seasons of ordinary severity his return by sea to St. John's would have been impossible; and he intended to have made for the nearest port that was free from ice, and have come on overland. The mildness of the weather, hitherto, had prevented any great accumulation of ice along the coast, although the harbour was frequently skinned over, and its

AP. VIII.

CHAP. VIII.] RETURN OF DR. STUWITZ.

mouth alternately opened and blocked up by ice and frozen snow on each influx and reflux of the tide. Two or three severe days would have been sufficient to close it entirely, or a field of ice from the northward might drift down and beset the whole coast. However. on the 25th, I had the satisfaction of seeing his boat making her way into the harbour, and he soon landed on the wharf. He had suffered greatly, having frequently been out at sea all night in his open boat in the severest weather: he had, however, made many good observations, and collected specimens of the land and sea fauna both of St. Peter's and Fortune Bay. There was now but little time left to make arrangements for our voyage to the ice. The generality of the vessels "going to the ice" are schooners and brigs from 80 to 150 tons, manned by a stout crew of rough fishermen, with a skipper at their head of their own stamp. These ships are inconceivably filthy, being often saturated with oil; and crew and skipper all live and lie together in a narrow dark cabin of the smallest possible dimensions, and the fewest possible conveniences, everything being in common. In such a vessel as

ebruary, e return heard no easons of to St. and he rest port come on weather, accumuugh the , and its

this it was evidently impossible for us to be accommodated, nor would either crew or skipper have consented to take us. There are, however, one or two masters of ships of a superior description who reserve the after-cabin to themselves, and keep the crew in the forecastle. Among these, one of the most respectable was Mr. Furneaux, who having been at one time unsuccessful as a merchant, had retrieved his fortune by successful sealing enterprises; and he had just built a new vessel called the "Topaz," a brigantine of 120 tons, in which he was going out for the first time. She had a comfortable little after-cabin, with small state-rooms, containing altogether five berths. This cabin he agreed to share with us; Professor Stuwitz and his baggage were to occupy one state-room, myself and servant another, while the larger and after state-room was reserved for Captain Furneaux and his more important stores of powder, spirits, &c. I had discharged Kelly, and engaged a young fellow named Simon Grant, a clean, active, good-tempered lad, who was to act as cabin-steward and cook. Our expedition was looked upon in St. John's as rather a Quixotic undertaking, no

CHAP. VIII.] STARTING "FOR THE ICE."

one, except the men actually engaged, having yet had the curiosity "to go to the ice;" and these men either could not give clear descriptions, or purposely made rather a mystery of the matter. At length, on

Tuesday, March 3rd,-We had got everything on board, and were all ready for a start. The wind was in the morning unfavourable, but began to get variable towards the middle of the day, and we were anxiously looking for a change. Being heartily tired of waiting, however, and Captain Furneaux saying he should not start for an hour or two, at least, I strolled with the gentleman at whose wharf the vessel lay into the billiard-room. We had finished three rubbers, when, happening to look out of the back window, we saw over the roofs of the houses the topsails of a vessel loose, with the house-flag of my companion at the masthead: throwing down our cues, we rushed into the street, and the first person we met informed us that messengers were searching for us all over the town. I found on the wharf-head a host of friends assembled to take leave, the vessel with her sails loose and only moored by a single rope, and a punt alongside

IAP. VIII.

s to be r skipre are, of a sur-cabin he forerespectbeen at had reg enterv vessel 20 tons. rst time. in, with ther five with us; re to ocant anooom was his more I had . ng fellow ood-temward and on in St. king, no

waiting for me. I jumped into the punt, sculled off, clambered up the side of the vessel as they cast off the rope, and before I could get my foot on the deck we were under sail. Three cheers greeted us from the wharf as our sails filled, and the crew were called aft to return it: one cheer more from the wharf-head, and we were off. The harbour was covered with thin ice, and frozen snow, that yielded before the pressure of the vessel; and, as we slowly advanced, cheers resounded from several others of the wharfs as their respective vessels cast off their moorings and set sail. We passed two smaller vessels which were stuck fast in a pan of ice, and endeavouring to make their way out; another brig joined us as we entered the narrows, in company with which we sailed from the harbour and lay alongshore to the northward. In consequence of my billiard playing I had lost my dinner, but we had hardly gone a mile before the keen air recalled this fact to my recollection, and I dived into the cabin to examine the interior of a meat pie. This was about four P.M., and yet at half-past seven I was at supper with the rest, with a hearty appetite,

CHAP. VIII.] ARRIVAL AT THE ICE.

on hot beef-steaks. Our vessel, the Topaz, seemed to sail very well on a wind, as we drew a-head of all the vessels we came near. The swell was very trifling, and there were scarcely any waves. The surface of the water was in a half-congealed state, and had a thick greasy appearance, as if it were of the consistence of pea-soup: this was owing either to a quantity of snow resting on the water, or to the first formation of small spiculæ of ice, and it gave a very peculiar appearance to the long lazy swell of the sea. At sunset we were off Cape St. Francis, with a long line of white on the north-eastern horizon, showing the edge of the ice to be in that direction. During the night, while fast asleep in my berth, I was awakened by a loud rushing and roaring noise, with continued vibration and heavy jars now and then, which 1 found to proceed from the ship having entered the ice, the thin sheets of which were scraping and rubbing against her sides, while here and there a heavy lump shook her as she struck it. At last we stuck fast, and the crew were then called to free her, and she was put about, sailed back to the southward, and kept more in-shore in a broad channel between the ice and the land.

P. VIII.

punt, f the hefore were from e crew r more The frozen of the cheers harfs as oorings · vessels ce, and t; anoharrows, rom the thward. g I had he a mile t to my cabin to This was ven I was appetite,

March 4th.—At daylight this morning we were just at the entrance of Trinity Bay, and should have been much farther but for the detention of last night A broad belt of clear water stretched across Trinity Bay, from Baccalieu Island to Cape Bonavista, while ice occupied the interior of the Bay on the one hand, and stretched off far away to the northward on the other. Many vessels were in sight, some in the clear water, others in the ice. Near two of the latter, which were in the ice five or six miles to the north of us, we could just discern some little black dots slowly moving about: these were part of the crew breaking the ice, and trying to cut their vessels out. Much of the ice near us was in the state the men call "lolly," by which they mean soft, half-frozen snow, floating on the surface of the water, not more than five or six inches in thickness, and yielding readily to pressure. On reaching Cape Bonavista we found the channel along which we had hitherto advanced blocked up, and the ice close to the shore, with only a few open pools here and there, and small channels leading to nothing. Several vessels were tacking to and fro along the edge of the ice, waiting for a favourable

CHAP. VIII.] APPEARANCE OF THE ICE.

opportunity of making their way through it. Taking advantage, however, of a part where the ice was loose and broken, we pushed through, doubled the Cape, and then followed a small channel, in the direction of two or three vessels ahead. In a mile or two this likewise closed, and for the rest of the evening we continued sailing about in such pools of smooth water as were left in the intervals of the ice. The aspect of this ice was very different from that of fresh-water ice, being much softer, quite white, and opaque, and looking rather like frozen snow than ice. It was generally about a foot thick, but was cracked in every possible direction, and broken into large cakes or pans, of all shapes and sizes, that were sometimes jammed and crushed together, and sometimes slowly moved on and made to revolve by the grinding of their edges together. Frequently one piece was tilted up and rested partly on another, and here and there small pieces were lying loose on the surface of others. The sides and edges of the pans seemed frequently water-worn into holes and hollows, and sharp spurs sometimes projected under water. Some of these masses of

IAP. VIII.

ng we ay, and the deof clear m Bachile ice the one northwere in the ice. the ice ould just moving breaking sels out. state the ean soft, ce of the nches in pressure. bund the erto adse to the here and nothing. fro along avourable

ice of a smaller size had been washed and worn on all sides by the waves into the most irregular and fantastic shapes, now resembling the turrets and battlements of an ancient castle. and presently shifting and looking like the picturesque cliffs of a rocky shore. It was a lovely evening, mild, and pleasant on deck, the thermometer not having been below 40° Fahr. during the day. South of us lay the headland of Cape Bonavista, from which the varied shores of the Bay stretched away to the north-west, the surface of the land being patched and streaked with snow. Seaward was one vast expanse of white ice, with small lakes of dark water dotting its surface here and there, but the dreariness of this view was relieved by the number of vessels in sight.

This evening the crew were divided into watches and punts-crews, and prepared their bats and gaffs, expressions whose meaning will be better understood by the following description of the method adopted in manning a sealing vessel. The vessel undertakes to carry a certain number of men, and she is fitted out, provisioned, and found in everything by her owner, or a merchant hiring her, as the case

CHAP. VIII. | MANNING A SEALING VESSEL.

may be. The men then apply for a berth on board of her, and all those who are selected pay so much for their berth, generally about four pounds currency, and for this they are supplied with the ships' provisions during the voyage. The results of the voyage on their return are divided into two equal halves, one of which is shared among the men, the other divided between the captain and merchant in different proportions, according to their agreement or their various shares in the risk of the specu-Captain Furneaux was both master lation. and owner of the Topaz, and I believe he bore all the risk of the voyage, paying for her supplies and engaging his crew. The crew consisted of thirty-six men, who were divided into three watches, each under an appointed master of the watch, specifically engaged under that designation, and receiving something more than the rest of the crew. The men had each equal authority, and each acted as mate during his own watch, the charge of the deck being left to his care when the captain was below. We carried nine four-oared punts, three of them commanded by the three masters of the watch, and the other six by men

HAP. VIII.

d worn st irreing the castle, ike the t was a n deck, low 40° lay the nich the y to the d being Seaward th small ace here view was ight. ded into red their ning will descripng a sealo carry a itted out, g by her the case

picked from the crew, and likewise appointed by the captain. These punt-masters then drew lots, each one putting some article, such as a knife, &c., into a cap or bag, which was brought to the captain, who drew the articles out at random, and as he drew them out their owners were arranged accordingly. Then, in the order in which they were thus arranged, each in succession selected a punt out of the nine on deck, and afterwards chose the men to make up his crew. Each punt had, therefore, three men and a master attached to it, who alone were suffered to man it; and in cases of emergency, by calling out the number of the punt or the name of its master, it was ready and manned, without confusion or delay. This having been settled every man prepared his "gaff," by firmly fastening a spiked hook like a boat-hook, with strong line, to the head of a stout pole, about six or eight feet long; several yards of strong cord were also selected, which were prepared with a noose, for a "hauling rope," the use of which will be seen hereafter.

By the time that all these arrangements were made night was falling; and running

CHAP. VIII.] MAKING WAY THROUGH THE ICE. 261

HAP. VIII.

pointed n drew ich as a ch was articles ut their Chen, in ranged, t of the men to herefore. it, who cases of er of the as ready ay. This ared his hook like ead of a g; seveselected, e, for a l be seen

ngements running the vessel's nose into a stout pan of ice alongside, we brailed up and furled our sails, and lay secure and motionless as if moored to a wharf.

March 5th.-This morning was dark and foggy, with the wind at south-east. At seven o'clock, after making a tack or two about an open lake, and finding no channel, we dashed into the ice, with all sail set, in company with two other vessels, on a north north-west course. The ice soon got firmer, thicker, and heavier, and we shortly stuck fast. "Overboard with you ! gaffs and pokers !" sung out the captain ; and over went, accordingly, the major part of the crew to the ice. The pokers were large poles of light wood, six or eight inches in circumference, and twelve or fifteen feet long: pounding with these, or hewing the ice with axes, the men would split the pans near the bows of the vessel, and then, inserting the ends of the pokers, use them as large levers, lifting up one side of the broken piece and depressing the other, and several getting round with their gaffs, they shoved it, by main force, under the adjoining ice. Smashing, breaking, and pounding the smaller pieces in the course the vessel wished to take, room was afforded for the mo-

tion of the larger pans. Laying out great claws on the ice ahead, when the wind was light the crew warped the vessel on. If a large and strong pan was met with, the ice-saw was Sometimes, a crowd of men clinging got out. round the ship's bows, and holding on to the bights of ropes suspended there for the purpose, would jump and dance on the ice, bending and breaking it with their weight, shoving it below the vessel, and dragging her on over it with all their force. Up to their knees in water, as one piece after another sank below the cutwater, they still held on, hurraing at every fresh start she made, dancing, jumping, pushing, shoving, hauling, hewing, sawing, till every soul on board was roused into excited exertion. After looking on some time, I could stand it no longer: so, seizing a gaff, I jumped overboard, but soon got a damper, as, in my first essay to cross before the vessel, I did not distinguish the sound pieces from the mere broken mash and lolly, and in I went to my middle before I was aware of it. One of the men caught hold of me, and I scrambled up the side of the vessel, a little cooler than I went down. Every fresh hand, they said, has to pay

CHAP. VIII.] CUTTING THROUGH THE ICE.

his footing for his first dip: so I was obliged not only to lose my footing in water myself, but give it afterwards in rum to the crew. They continued their exertions the whole of the day, relieved occasionally by small open pools of water; and in the evening we calculated we had made about fifteen miles.

It continued foggy all day, and at night it began to rain. We had seen no vessel since the morning—nothing but a dreary expanse of ice and snow stretching away into the misty horizon.

March 6th.—At daylight we found ourselves a few miles from Green's Pond, on the north side of Bonavista Bay, and with the glass could discern the houses and the church. The wind was from the west, and the sky fine and clear. Several vessels were near us, and many more on the horizon. The ice became thicker, stronger, and more compact. We made a few miles in the morning, and stuck fast the rest of the day in a very large pan or field of ice, sawing, axing, prising, warping, &c. &c., as yesterday. The thermometer during the day was about 37°, and the weather pleasant. I walked about on the ice to get accustomed to

P. VIII.

great d was a large w was inging to the urpose, ending ving it over it nees in below aing at imping, ing, till excited I could jumped , in my did not he mere t to my e of the bled up n I went s to pay

it. In the afternoon a long swell came in from the eastward, raising the fields of ice in long slow undulations as far as we could see. There was, however, no open water visible in any direction from the mast-head. In the evening it was mild, with a drizzling rain.

March 7th.—Fresh breeze from west and north-west, cold but fine. A vessel close by left St. John's just after we did; her captain came on board and made a morning call. The ice gets continually heavier as we proceed to the northward; great blocks and slabs of it are tilted up and piled on one another here and there, as if occasionally jammed and forced together with great violence. In the afternoon the ice opened a little, the pans became more loose, and separated a little one from the other. We accordingly crowded all sail, and cracked on with a fresh breeze, urging our way now through slowly yielding pans, now sailing gallantly through an open lake of water, and then crashing into a great sheet of ice, splitting it with a mighty fissure, but brought up ourselves all standing and top-gallants set. Then, slowly gathering way again, we proceeded as The motion while in the ice is like before.

eo di

 \mathbf{th}

01

co at

by

in

qu a 1 P. VIII.

from long There ny diyening

st and ose by captain l. The ceed to of it are ere and rced tofternoon ne more ne other. cracked way now ling galand then litting it up our-. Then, eeded as e is like CHAP. VIII.]

THE FIRST SEAL.

that of a steamer, continually trembling and vibrating with the thumping and rubbing of the ice, while the scraping of the pieces against the sides of the vessel makes a noise like the roar of machinery. The weather was fine and clear, and in the afternoon we got one or two good runs through some large lakes of water, and hove-to during the night in a smaller one, the wind blowing a heavy breeze.

March 8th.-Quite calm this morning, with large pieces of ice all around us. I shot a seabird, called in Newfoundland a mur, which is. I believe, some species of mergulus; and saw also a large snowy owl flying about, but could not get a shot. I found also on a piece of ice the greater portion of one of the common echini of Newfoundland, broken, and full of This must have been inclosed in dried mud. the ice originally on the beach, in some bay or inlet, as, if brought by a bird, it would have contained no dirt. We were now, however, at least forty miles from land, and surrounded by ice on all sides. In the course of the morning I spied a great seal on the ice about a quarter of a mile off, and, taking my rifle and a man with a gaff, went to get a shot. We VOL. I. N

found, however, the ice in that direction broken by many channels full of "lolly," which were too wide to leap. In returning, I slipped in jumping from one pan to another, and fell into some of this "lolly:" luckily I had passed the gun to the man, and he had given me the gaff, which, as I fell, was caught by its ends upon the ice, and by this means I got across to my companion, who hauled me out. I had heavy seal-skin boots on, coming half way up the thigh, which being now full of lolly formed a delightful case for my leg had I wished it frozen. However, the ducking seemed to do me good, and, oddly enough, quite cured a cold which I had relt coming on before the In the evening a cold north wind accident. sprang up, and the ice closed in on every side, locking us quite fast. Thermometer on deck at six р.м. 24°.

Last night, as we sailed rapidly through the broken ice and water, there was an abundance of the phosphorescent flashes and sparks so well known at sea. Many of these sparks were observed, not only in the water, but either in or upon the small lumps of ice. They must probably have been in the water which washed

CHAP. VIII.

ı broken ch were ipped in fell into assed the the gaff, nds upon ss to my ad heavy y up the formed a wished it ned to do e cured a before the north wind every side, er on deck

hrough the abundance sparks so nese sparks , but either They must nich washed

CHAP. VIII.] PHOSPHORESCENT ICE.

over the ice, but they had every appearance of being *in* the ice, whose interior appeared to be lit up by them. They were most beautiful objects, and might have formed fitting lamps for the caves of the Nereids. Stuwitz found infusoria in ice in Fortune Bay, which, when the ice was melted, were living and uninjured.

March 9th.-Light wind from north. Thermometer at nine A.M. 22°, and in the afternoon 27°. We passed this morning through some very heavy ice. It was broken and piled in huge slabs and blocks, resting one upon another in various directions, the cracks and crevices filled up with snow, and frequently worn by successive thaws and frosts, rains, winds, and waves, into the most striking and fantastic forms. This broken ice occupied a rather definite band for some distance, and appeared to have been once the external edge of the ice on which a heavy sea had beat violently. Many of these blocks were higher than the rail of the vessel, or about fifteen or twenty feet from the surface of the sea, and as many yards in diameter, with upright sheets and pinnacles rising occasionally still higher.

N 2

March 10th.—At dawn a gale from the south brought rain and dirty weather, and we lay all day fast in the ice with our sails furled. In the afternoon we filled all the watercasks that had up to this time been emptied with beautifully clear fresh water, collected in the hollow of a pan alongside of us. After dark the wind fell, and the clouds gradually cleared off before a light westerly breeze, unfolding a most lovely sky studded with bright stars, and adorned by the presence of the young moon, and the brilliant flickering streamers of a fine aurora in the north. The ice too opened, and we sailed gently through calm water, among numberless fairy islets of glittering ice and wreaths of snow, with shining pinnacles and fantastic forms floating calmly about us, and---

" Quietly shining to the quiet moon."

Everything was still, and even the sailors hushed their noisy clamour, insensibly silenced by the influence of this most lovely scene. Even the hoarse voice of the master of the watch as he sung out, from the foretop, brief orders to the helmsman, was not out of har-

HAP. VIII.

om the and we ur sails e wateremptied collected After graduy breeze, th bright ie young amers of opened, n water, ering ice oinnacles about us,

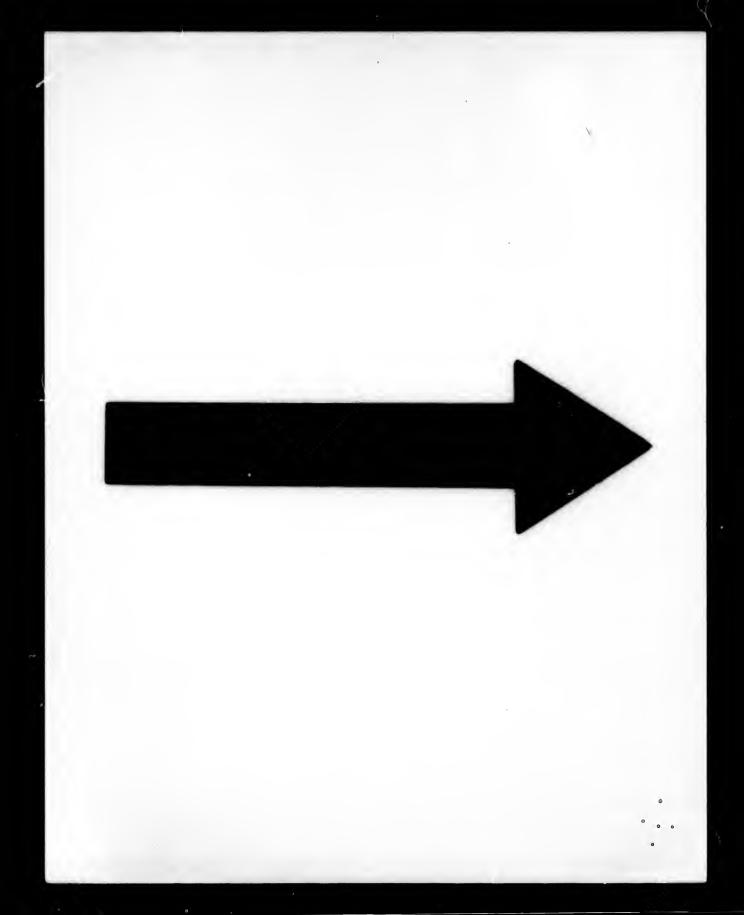
e sailors v silenced ly scene. er of the top, brief t of har-

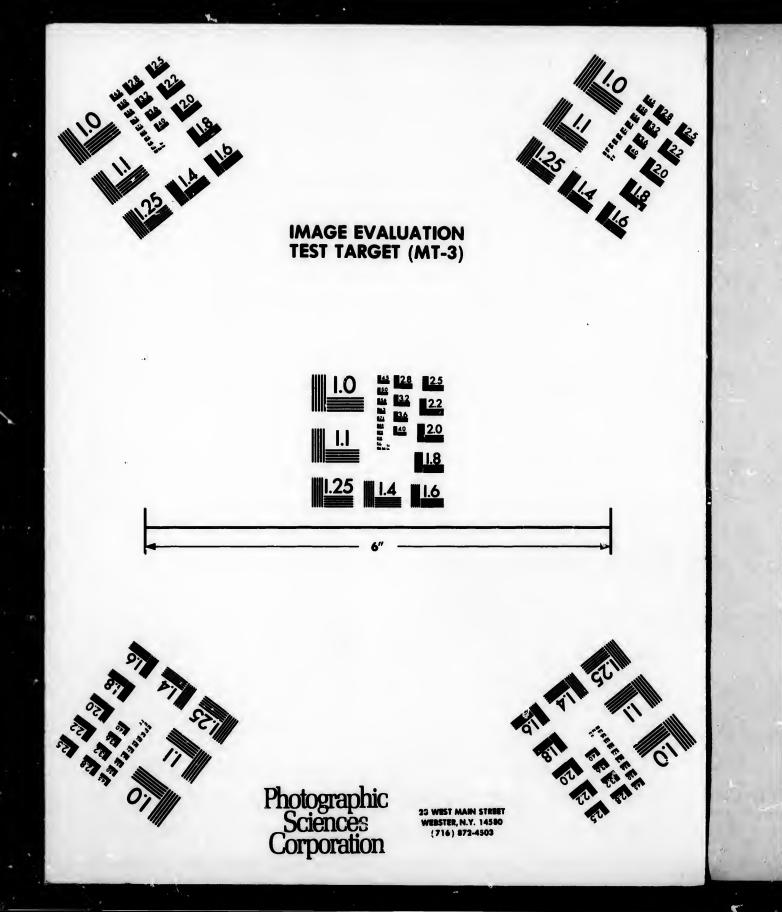
CHAP. VIII.]

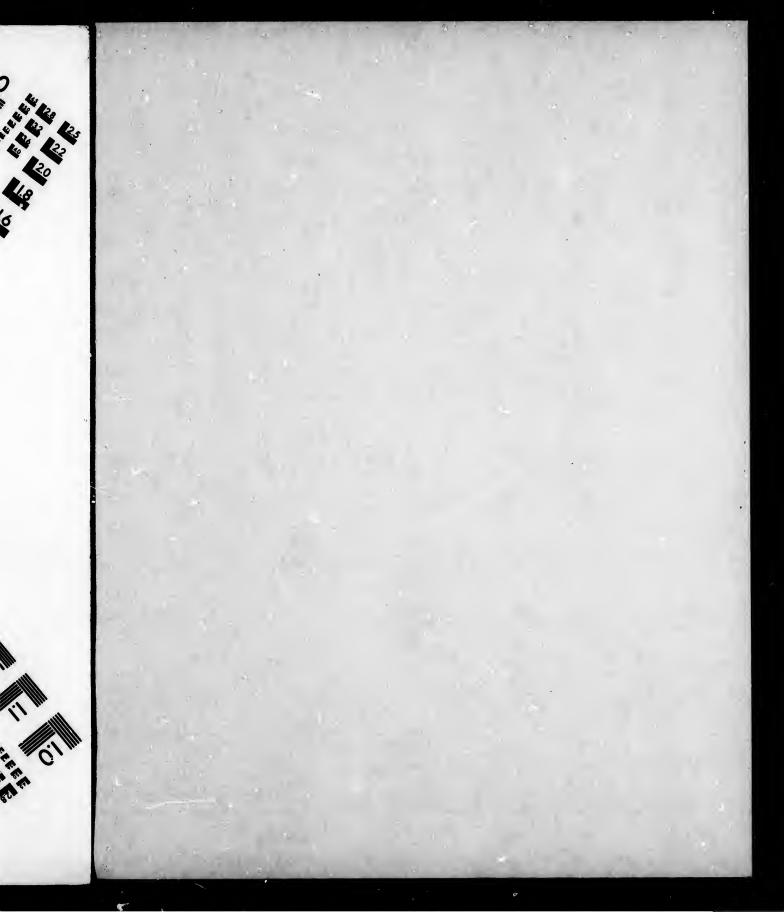
A STILL NIGHT.

mony with the feelings of the time, while, sounding at intervals, it served but to make the silence of all nature around us more deep and solemn. For a long time Stuwitz and I stood silent in the bows of the vessel, entranced by the novelty and beauty of all around and above us. It seemed the realization of the poetic visions of early youth in its dreams of the fleeting and unearthly loveliness of fairy-land. Gradually, however, the aurora faded from the sky, the vessel passed from the open pools of water into a field of closely packed ice-pans; and the enchantment was dissolved by the cry of "Gaffs and pokers!" and the usual thumping, grinding, and shouting of our passage through close ice.

March 11th.—Light breeze from the S.E., with fog and hoar frost. Thermometer at 10 A.M. 33° F. The vessel making but little way, the ice being closely packed. Two men came on board this morning from a vessel at no great distance, but which we could not see for the fog. It was singular, in such apparently utter solitude and desolation, to see two human beings making their appearance. After a chat with their friends on board the Topaz, and a







glass of grog, they went off again into the fog to return to their vessel. The watch on deck last night heard the cry of a young seal. The weather remained the same all day, but in the afternoon the ice opened, and we got a fair run of some distance to the northward.

March 12th.-Again foggy, with a southeast wind. As we stood on deck this morning before breakfast, we heard a cry down to leeward, like the cry of a gull, which some of the men said it was. It became, however, so loud and continued, that both Stuwitz and I doubted its being the cry of any bird, and one of the men took a gaff and went to look. We watched him for som : distance with our glasses as he proceeded slowly through the fog till he suddenly began to run, and then struck at something, and presently returned dragging a young seal elive over the ice, and brought it on deck. It was of a dirty white colour, with short close fur, large dark expressive eyes, and it paddled and walloped about the deck fierce and bawling. A Newfoundland dog called Nestor, belonging to the Captain, approached it, but it snapped at his nose and bit him, though its teeth were but just beginning to

CHAP. VIII.] CATCHING A YOUNG SEAL.

HAP. VIII.

the fog on deck l. The but in ot a fair

southnorning to leesome of ever, so z and I and one k. We r glasses g till he truck at ragging brought colour, ive eyes, he deck bg called oroached oit him, nning to

appear. After taking it down below to show the Captain and demand the usual quart of rum for the first man who caught a seal, one of the men knocked it on the head and skinned it. Stuwitz then cut off its "fippers" or paws and its head, and after breakfast we took it into the "after-hatch," or steerage, where he drew and dissected it. In the middle of the day we heard from some of the men who had been out on the ice, that a vessel a few miles a-head of us had already 2500 seals on board, so we pushed on through the ice, and shortly came into a lake of water. On the borders of this many young seals were lying, and two or three punts were hoisted out to despatch and collect them. I shot one through the head that was scuffling off a pan of ice, but the crew begged me to desist, as they said the balls might glance from the ice and injure some of the men who were about. Having picked up the few which were immediately about us, we hoisted in our punts again, as there were several vessels near us, and more coming up, and bore away farther north through an open pool of water. In passing through a thin skirt of ice, one of the men

hooked up a young seal with his gaff. Its cries were precisely like those of a young child in the extremity of agony and distress, something between shrieks and convulsive sobbings. It thrilled one's nerves at first, but when I found that their sole employment, when alone on the ice, was uttering similar cries, and that nearly the same cry was expressive of enjoyment or defiance as of pain and fear, I became more reconciled. We soon afterwards passed through some loose ice on which the young seals were scattered, and nearly all hands were overboard slaying, skinning, and hauling. We then got into another lake of water and sent out five punts. The crews of these joined those already on the ice, and dragging either the whole seals or their "pelts" to the edge of the water, collected them in the punts, and when one of these was full brought them on board. The cook of the vessel, and my man Simon, with the Captain and myself, managed the vessel, circumnavigating the lake and picking up the boats as they put off one after another from the edge of the ice. In this way, when it became too dark to do any more, we found we had got three hundred seals on board, and

CHAP. VIII.] KILLING AND SKINNING THE SEALS. 273

the deck was one great shambles. When piled in a heap together the young seals looked like so many lambs, and when occasionally, from out of the bloody and dirty mass of carcasses, one poor wretch still alive would lift up its face and begin to flounder about, I could stand it no longer; and arming myself with a handspike I proceeded to knock on the head and put out of their misery all in whom I saw signs of After dark we left the lake and got life. jammed in a field of ice with the wind blowing strong from the north-west. The watch was employed in skinning those seals which were brought on board whole, and throwing away the carcass. In skinning, a cut is made through the fat to the flesh, a thickness generally of about three inches, along the whole length of the belly from the throat to the tail. The legs or "fippers," and also the head, are then drawn out from the inside, and the skin is laid out flat and entire, with the layer of fat or blubber firmly adhering to it, and the skin in this state is called the "pelt," and sometimes the "sculp." It is generally about three feet long and two feet and a half wide, and weighs from thirty to fifty pounds.

HAP. VIII.

ff. Its g child , somebbings. when I n alone id that enjoybecame passed ng seals re over-We then ent out d those her the e of the d when board. Simon. ged the picking another when it und we rd, and

N 3

The carcass when turned out of its warm covering is light and slim, and, except such parts as are preserved for eating, is thrown away.

March 13th.—As soon as it was light this morning all hands were overboard on the ice, and the whole of the day was employed in slaughtering young seals in all directions and hauling their pelts to the vessel. The day was clear and cold, with a strong north-west wind blowing, and occasionally the vessel made good way through the ice, the men following her and clearing off the seals on each side as we went along. The young seals lie dispersed here and there on the ice, basking in the sun, and often sheltered by the rough blocks and piles of ice, covered with snow. Six or eight may sometimes be seen within a space of twenty yards square. The men, armed with a gaff and a hauling rope slung over their shoulders, disperse about on the ice, and whenever they find a seal strike it a heavy blow on the head, which either stuns the animal or kills it outright. Having killed or at least stunned all they see within a short distance, they skin, or, as they call it, "sculp" them with a broad clasp-knife, called a sculpingHAP. VIII.

1 coverh parts way. tht this the ice, oyed in ons and lay was est wind l made llowing side as lie dissking in e rough h snow. within a , armed ver their d whenblow on imal or at least distance, " them culping-

CHAP. VIII.]

"SCULPING."

knife, and nicking two holes along the edge of each side of the skin, they lay them one over another, passing the rope through the nose of each pelt and lacing it through the side holes, in such a manner that when pulled tight it draws them into a compact bundle. Fastening the gaff in this bundle, they then put the rope over the shoulder, and haul it away over the ice to the vessel. In this way they bring in bundles of pelts three, six, or even seven at a time, and sometimes from a distance of two miles. Six pelts, however, is reckoned a very heavy load to drag over the rough and broken ice, leaping from pan to pan, and they generally contrive to keep two or three together to assist each other at the bad places, or to pull those out who fall into the water. The ice to-day was in places very slippery and in others broken and treacherous, and as I had not got my boots properly fitted with " sparables " and " chisels " I stayed on board and helped the captain and the cook in managing the vessel and whipping in the pelts as they were brought alongside. By twelve o'clock, however, my arms were aching with this work, and on the lee side of the vessel

we stood more than knee deep in warm seal skins, all blood and fat. Some of the men brought in as many as sixty each in the course of the day, and by night the decks were covered, in many places the full height of the rail. As the men came on board they occasionally snatched a hasty moment to drink a bowl of tea, or eat a piece of biscuit and butter; and as the sweat was dripping from their faces, and their hands and bodies were reeking with blood and fat, and they often spread the butter with their thumbs, and wiped their faces with the backs of their hands, they took both the liquids and the solids mingled with blood. The deck of course, when the deck could be seen, was almost as slippery with gore as if it had been Still there was a bustle and excitement ice. in the scene that did not permit the fancy to dwell on the disagreeables, and after a hearty refreshment the men would snatch up their gaffs and hauling ropes, and hurry off in search of new victims : besides, every pelt was worth a dollar! During this time hundreds of old seals were popping up their heads in the small lakes of water and holes among the ice, anxiously looking for their young. OccaHAP. VIII.

m seal e men course ere cothe rail. sionally bowl of and as ces, and th blood ter with with the e liquids The deck een, was had been citement fancy to a hearty up their v off in pelt was hundreds heads in nong the . Occa-

CHAP. VIII.]

SEAL-CATCHING.

sionally one would hurry across a pan in search of the snow-white darling she had left, and which she could not recognise in the bloody and broken carcass, stripped of its warm covering, that alone remained of it. I fired several times at these old ones in the afternoon with my rifle from the deck, but without success, as unless the ball hits them on the head, it is a great chance whether it touch any vital part, the body being so thickly clothed with fat. In the evening, however, Captain Furneaux went out on the ice and killed two with his sealing-gun loaded with seal shot. The wind had now sunk to a light air, and the sun set most gloriously, glancing from the golden west across the bright expanse of snow, now stained with many a bloody spot and the ensanguined trail which marked the footsteps of the intruders on the peacefulness of the scene. Several vessels came up near us from the south, in the afternoon; but notwithstanding all the slaughter the air as night closed in resounded with the cries of the young seals on every side of us. As the sunlight faded in the west, the quiet moon looked down from the zenith, and a brilliant

arch of aurora crossed the heavens nearly from east to west, in a long waving line of glancing light, slowly moving backwards and forwards from north to south across the face of the moon. The evenings after a north-west wind are certainly most lovely, the atmosphere clear and transparent, and having that dry crispness and elasticity that makes every breath send the blood dancing with fresh vigour from the heart. It is on a clear night. moreover, beneath the milder light of the moon, and contrasted with the deeper blue of the sky, that ice scenery looks best. In daylight it is too dazzling, garish and monotonous: the moon and the stars. and the quivering aurora, are its fittest accompaniments.

March 14th. — Wind north-east, with fog and snow. Early in the morning the crew were out on the ice, and brought in 350 seals. The number hauled in yesterday was 1380, making the total number now on board upwards of 2,000. After suffering the pelts to lie open on deck a few hours, in order to get cool, they are stowed away in the hold, being laid one over the other in pairs, each pair having

CHAP. VIII.] PACKING THE SEAL - SKINS.

the hair outwards. The hold is divided by stout partitions into several compartments or " pounds" to prevent too much motion among the seal-skins and keep each in its place. The ballast is heaved entirely out as the pelts are stowed away, and the cargo is trusted to to ballast the vessel. In consequence of neglecting to divide the hold into pounds in one of his earlier voyages, Captain Furneaux told us he once lost his vessel. He was detained on his return, with 5000 seals on board, by strong contrary gales which kept him at sea till by the continual motion and friction his seals began to run into oil. The skins then dashed about from one side of the hold to the other, with every roll of the vessel, and he was obliged to run before the wind, which was then blowing from the north-west. The oil spread from the hold into the cabin and forecastle, floating over everything and forcing the crew to remain on the deck. They got up some bags of bread, and by putting a pump down through the oil into the water-casks they managed to get fresh water. After being in this state some days, himself and his crew were taken out of the vessel by a ship they

IAP. VIII.

nearly line of ds and he face th-west atmong that s every resh vir night, of the er blue est. In nd moand the ompani-

vith fog he crew 50 seals. hs 1380, bard uppelts to er to get d, being r having

luckily fell in with, and carried to St. John's, New Brunswick; but his own vessel, with her once valuable cargo, and almost all the property of both himself and his crew, were necessarily abandoned to the mercy of the winds and waves, and what became of her was never This was a good practical lesson as to known. the proper method of stowing a cargo of seals, and one not likely to be forgotten: in the present instance, therefore, the pounds were both numerous and strong. In the middle of the day the wind increased to a gale, with a heavy drift of snow, making it impossible to stir far from the vessel, and we shortly made a start and sailed with a close-reefed fore topsail through broken ice and pools of water. Suddenly we fell in with a number of seals, and in the hurry of the moment I followed several of the crew overboard to the ice, with my gun, and made for an old one I saw not far off. All the surface being quite white, I took it for granted we were fast in a great field of ice, and only just discovered, time enough to prevent my stepping into it, that the surface of the water was covered with snow which congealed as it fell, and that there were only a few

HAP. VIII.

John's, ith her ne proe neceswinds s never on as to of seals, the prere both e of the a heavy stir far e a start topsail . Sudals, and d several my gun, off. All k it for l of ice, h to prearface of ich conly a few

CHAP. VIII. J

DEPARTURE.

pans of ice around the vessel, which was still under way. By this time the Captain and Stuwitz were shouting to me to come on board, and running to the bows of the vessel across the last pan of ice that touched her, I had only just time to pass up my gun to a man that stooped over for it, and swing into the bight of a rope, before we were in clear water, driving furiously along. My essays hitherto were thus eminently unsuccessful. The Captain now took in all sail, and we scudded under bare poles amid clouds of snow, till we stuck fast in a large field of icc. We were then securely harboured, the men turned in, fastened down the hatches, and we in the cabin ate. drank, smoked, and read the few books we had with us, making ourselves as comfortable as circumstances would permit. Our only drawback of any consequence was the smokiness of the stoye, but I never was in a vessel yet in which the smoke did not come down the funnel of the stove at least as often as it went up it.

March 15th.—I was awakened last night by the vessel rocking, for the first time since we had entered the ice, and found that the field

about us had opened into great bays of water. It was now blowing a furious gale, and we were sailing under the spencer through loose ice and open pools. The decks were as slippery as glass with frozen snow and blood; the thermometer being down at 17° at two P.M. We still picked up a young seal or two in the morning, but in the afternoon were again fast among close ice, and there was nothing more to be done but to repeat the amusements and occupations of yesterday. Towards evening the wind moderated a little, but was still very cold.

March 16th. — Beautiful morning, with a light wind from the west. Sailing through thin ice and open spaces of water. There were many vessels in sight, and several icebergs, some of the latter of considerable size. At ten A.M. the thermometer was 27°. We did not get near any icebergs, but looking at them with the assistance of the telescope I could see nothing but ice and snow. A large one about three miles from us had apparently been half tilted over, there being a perfectly straight indented mark across it, which had evidently once been its water line, though now it crossed

CHAP. VIII.

f water. we were ice and pery as he ther-M. We in the gain fast ng more ents and evening still very

with a through ere were icebergs, At ten did not at them could see ne about een half night inwidently t crossed

CHAP. VIII.]

ICEBERGS.

the mass diagonally at an angle of about 45° with the horizon. Above this water line the ice was rough and jagged, below it smooth, though not level, and evidently water-worn. Behind the iceberg appeared a large low mass that may have been broken off from it, and thus caused it to tilt over. The field ice appeared to get thinner as we proceeded northwards, many pans, apparently firm, being nothing but frozen snow, through which one could drive a gaff, and one or two of the men got a ducking in consequence. I went out in a punt, and at a distance of not more than twenty yards positively drove a ball into the throat of an old seal that rose to look at us; notwithstanding which, he dived and got away. We brought one young seal on board to-day, alive and unhurt, by my particular request. He lay very quiet on deck, opening and closing his curious nostrils (which, when expanded, were nearly round, but closed firmly into a narrow slit), and occasionally lifting his fine dark lustrous eyes as if with wonder at the strange scene around him. His fur being quite dry and clean was as white as wool-short, and close, and thick, com-

posed of strong hair standing out perpendicularly everywhere, except on his face and his fippers, or paws. On being patted on the head he drew it in, making his face perpendicular to his body, knitted his brows, shut up his eyes and nostrils, and he then presented a very droll appearance, having a comical countenance in a circular bush-wig. With his head extended, however, and his eyes open, he was really a very pretty creature, looking so warm, and round, and comfortable. When teased, although quite young, he was fierce, biting and scratching at everything about him; but on being patted and stroked he immediately became quiet. These animals might certainly be easily tamed if properly managed. The men and the dog, however, teased this one till he became exhausted and dying, and I passed my knife into his heart, to put a stop to it at once. In the afternoon two of the men went out on the ice with their sealing guns, and shot three bedlamers, or seals of one year old, and brought them on board, where Stuwitz measured, drew, and described them. The sealing-gun is an immense affair, as long as a duck-gun, but with a much wider bore,

CHAP. VIII.] SHOOTING THE SEALS.

roughly made, and, in some instances, not over-sound. The men put in a great charge of powder and shot—frequently ten fingers' breadth, or even more—the powder being coarse, and the shot larger than buck-shot, consisting, in fact, rather of small bullets than shot, being cast, and not dropped. It was as much as I could do to hold one of these guns straight out; and the men were frequently knocked down by its rebound, when they fired standing on slippery ice.

At twelve o'clock to-day we took an observation, for the first time, and found our latitude to be 50° 17'. What our longitude was we were obliged to guess—no chromometer could stand the jarring and thumping it would receive in so small a vessel among the ice; and as for keeping a dead reckoning, that was entirely out of the question. Working and winding our way among the ice wherever there seemed the best opening between the pans, changing our course every minute, the vessel brought with her head up in the wind by the prossure of a pan of ice at one minute, turned off by another right before it the next minute, sailing now rapidly through a pool of water, then

CHAP. VIII.

perpenface and d on the perpenws, shut hen preg a comir. With yes open, , looking . When as fierce, out him; e immels might managed. l this one g, and I a stop to the men ng guns, one year here Stued them. , as long ider bore,

stuck fast for half an hour in the ice, and, even when apparently stationary, drifting in an unknown direction. at an unknown rate, with the whole body of the ice-the log is of course utterly useless. All we knew was that we were north or north-east of Newfoundland, in latitude 50° 17'. This is the parallel of the south coast of Devonshire, where the winters are so mild, and where a lump of ice out at sea would astonish the inhabitants not a little. What would these good people think if the English Channel, the Irish Sea, and the German Ocean were blocked up with icefloes, and if it were possible to cross from France to England, and thence to Ireland; to proceed northwards and pass over first to Scotland, and then to Norway, and afterwards coming southwards, to return again from France to England, and all on solid ice? Had the western coast of Europe the same climate as the eastern coast of America, this would be an occurrence within the limits of possibility, and certainly not a winter would pass without all the seas round England being blocked up with ice; our early crops would then perish; our woods would become stunted, and our

CHAP. VIII.] COLD OF EASTERN AMERICA.

CHAP. VIII.

ce, and, ifting in wn rate. log is of was that ewfoundparallel where the np of ice nts not a ple think , and the h icefloes, France to proceed Scotland, s coming France to the westte as the ld be an ossibility, s without ocked up n perish; and our oaks, ashes, and elms give way to pines and larches: mosses and lichens would spread over our corn-fields and pastures, and England would become a desolate and barren country.

In the afternoon a St. John's schooner came alongside, with scarcely any seals on board, and followed us for the rest of the day, hoping to profit by our good fortune. Captain Furneaux was a noted man as a lucky seal-hunter; the luck, in fact, consisting in energy and perseverance, and never stopping or losing a minute till he did find them. In the evening the wind fell to a light air, and the sunset was beautiful. We were sailing quietly to the north, through thin, broken ice, in hopes of meeting with some of a thicker and firmer description, on which there was a greater probability of finding seals. The moon was bright overhead, with thin streaks of cloud in patches about the sky, dimly veiling the stars; and though it was cold, we stood long on deck watching the shadow of the sails as we passed successively from the white ice to the dark water.

March 17th.—A beautiful morning, quite calm and mild. In the afternoon a light air

sprung up from the south-east, and it became rather foggy; the ice was very loose, and the pans, covered with snow, were very rotten and treacherous. The decks were now cleared up, and everything put snug and comfortable again. In some of the open pools of water to-day I observed a singular appearance. Spaces fifty or sixty yards across were covered with a thin film of clear ice, that seemed to be made up of round scales the size of one's hand, frozen together into larger flakes or scales about a vard in diameter : these frequently overlapped each other, and being very bright and shining, looked like the scaly side of a gigantic fish. We gathered some snow from the surface of a pan to-day that seemed quite salt, the spray of the sea having probably been blown over it.

March 18th.—Fine morning, light breeze from the east, the vessel making some way among ice very loose and rather thin. The farther we go north the more thin and broken the ice seems to get, much of it seeming to be merely frozen snow, which, alighting on the surface of the sea, has become saturated with water and then frozen hard. We got one young seal again this morning, and an old

CHAP. VIII.

became and the tten and ared up, le again. to-day I aces fifty th a thin ade up of d, frozen about a verlapped d shining, antic fish. rface of a e spray of over it. ht breeze some way hin. The nd broken ning to be ng on the rated with e got one nd an old

CHAP. VIII.]

A HOODED SEAL.

hooded seal made his appearance alongside, being the first we had seen-all we had hitherto met with being harp-seals. At eleven o'clock we came within two miles of a schooner that was moored to a pan of ice on one side of a lake of open water, and we sent a punt accordingly to see if there were seals in the neighbourhood. As soon as they touched the ice, we saw the men commence killing and hauling, so we immediately hoisted out all the punts and went after them. I went with one punt, taking my double-barrelled gun and some seal-shot. I got several shots at old seals, but found the charges from my fowlingpiece not heavy enough for them, as, though I wounded several severely, most of them got away, and I only killed one or two dead on the spot. Even the young ones, unless hit about the head or in the heart, will carry off a good deal of shot. I knocked over one young one that was shuffling off a pan, but notwithstanding this he popped into the water, and swimming about ten yards, crawled on to another pan, when I gave him the other barrel: he again got into the water, and on his crawling out one of the men fired a sealing-gun at him, VOL. I. 0

but the contents only striking him about the tail he again got away, and it was only by shooting him in the head as he raised it from the water, that I succeeded in killing him at Generally, however, the young ones last. did not attempt to stir as we approached them, and quietly suffered themselves to be knocked on the head with the gaff, and skinned on the spot. I saw one poor wretch skinned, or sculped, while yet alive, and the body writhing in blood after being stripped of its pelt. The man told me he had seen them swim away in that state, and that if the first blow did not kill them, they could not stop to give them a second. How is it one can steel one's mind to look on that which to read of, or even to think of afterwards, makes one shudder? In the bustle, hurry, and excitement, these things pass as a matter of course and as if necessary, but they are most horrible, and will not admit of an attempt at palliation. As this morning I was left alone to take care of the punt while the men were on the ice, the mass of dying carcasses piled in the boat around me each writhing, gasping, and spouting blood into the air nearly made me sick. Seeking relief in action,

CHAP. VIII.

bout the only by d it from r him at ing ones ed them, knocked ed on the nned, or writhing elt. The a away in w did not ve them a s mind to n to think ? In the hings pass ssary, but t admit of norning I unt while dying carach writhnto the air f in action,

CHAP. VIII.] HORRIBLE TREATMENT OF THE SEALS. 291

I drove the sharp point of the gaff into the brain of every one in which I could see a sign of life. The vision of one poor wretch writhing its snow-white woolly body with its head bathed in blood, through which it was vainly endeavouring to see and breathe, really haunted my dreams. Notwithstanding all this the excitement of being out in the punt, forcing our way through narrow channels between the ice-pans into lakes of water where old seals were sporting on every side, filling our boat with pelts, engineering so as to sweep over a mile or two of new ground, and return to the vessel by a different way from that we came, clearing the ice of seals as we went along, and the hunting spirit which makes almost every man an animal of prey, and delight in the produce of his gun or his bow, kept me in the punt till a late hour in the afternoon. In our first trip we brought thirty-three on board; in the second, forty-four; and in the third, a still greater number. Thirty old or "round seals," or sixty pelts, are as many as the boat will carry with four men. One boat, however, brought one hundred and three at one trip, having upwards of forty in tow in the water,

but she was down nearly to the water's edge. Stuwitz made, I believe, several interesting observations to-day on both old and young as they were brought on board, as also on the still-born young, which the men call cats, and of which we found several lying on the ice. By night-fall we again had our decks covered with seals' pelts, and the men were busy all night heaving out ballast and stowing them away.

March 19th.-Foggy, and nearly calm: a few punts were out in the morning, but it was too thick to go far, and there were, but few seals near us. There were 1080 brought in yesterday, and about 100 this morning, making about 3300 now on board altogether. We sailed about an open lake of water all day, and at night went into the ice. A heavy swell was now rolling in from the east, raising all the ice into long sweeping undulations of considerable height and breadth: there was not, however, much drifting or clashing of the ice-pans together, but each piece rose and fell perpendicularly on the waves that successively travelled beneath it, without other apparent motion. The thermometer for the last

CHAP. VIII.

r's edge. ceresting oung as on the cats, and the ice. ecks coen were stowing

calm: a ut it was but few ought in , making er. We day, and vy swell aising all ations of here was shing of rose and at succesother apr the last

CHAP. VIII.] THE HOODED SEAL.

few days has generally risen to 37° or 40° in the course of the day.

March 20th .- Very thick and foggy, with light wind from the north-east: two or three vessels near us, but no seals. We breakfasted this morning on the hearts and kidneys of young seals fried :--- they were very good, being just like pig's fry, but rather more tender and delicate. At ten o'clock we pushed into the ice on a north-west course; presently we heard some young seals "bawling" a-head, and in a short time we got among them, and most of crew went after them. The captain shot an old hooded seal on the ice, and Stuwitz and I went to cut him up and examine him. He was upwards of six feet long, and four or five in circumference in the thickest part of his body: on his nose and forehead was a great pulpy mass, like a black bag full of fat, overhanging above his eyes. This is the hood which, when angry or excited, can be blown out to a considerable size. He had a cold, malignant-looking eye, and his head altogether looked fierce and outré, something like a hippopotamus or rhinoceros. Stuwitz occupied

about an hour in measuring and drawing him, after which we sculped him and cut him up. The flesh was very black, and strong, and muscular, the fibres of the muscles still quivering when we cut into them, although he had been dead so long. His bones, on the contrary, were very thin and slender for so bulky an animal. We were another hour in dissecting him, up to our elbows in black blood; and as it froze on our hands and arms we were obliged occasionally to plunge them into his body to thaw and warm them.

The fat was between two and three inches thick; the skin, when it got dry, was a very beautiful one, being a dark silver-grey, elegantly spotted with black: this is the natural colour of all the seal skins, although when brought home the grey is changed to a dirty yellow, being soaked in the hold of the vessel with rancid fat. The fields of ice this morning were thrown into such strong undulations by the swell, that at a distance of fifty or sixty yards a man seemed to be alternately on the top of a sloping bank and in a hollow, by which half his person was hidden from sight. When

CHAP. VIII.] EFFECT OF A SWELL ON THE ICE. 295

walking and looking around, it gave a feeling of insecurity and giddiness, but when standing or kneeling, and looking down, not the smallest degree of motion was perceptible. I tried this two or three times, and after looking steadily down for a short time, was always obliged to raise my eyes to convince myself that the swell still continued. In the afternoon the fog thickened while some of our men were out a long way after seals; the captain and I accordingly amused ourselves with firing a ninepound carronade that was in the bows of the vessel once or twice every half hour as a signal. On one of these occasions, not having raised the breech enough, we blew away the part which was raised over the muzzle of the gun, and a piece of it flew backwards over my head, with which it very nearly came in contact. Before dark two men came alongside, looking for eight men missing from their vessel, and shortly afterwards two more from another vessel, who had lost their way in the fog. Gradually all our crew found their way back, and the four strangers slept on board of us. Throughout the night we could hear guns and signals of various kinds from different vessels around us

[CHAP. VIII.

ing him, him up. ong, and still quiough he the conso bulky n dissectood; and we were into his

ee inches as a very rey, elee natural gh when o a dirty he vessel morning ations by or sixty on the top by which . When

whose men were missing. Beating the outside of the bulwarks with a rope makes a noise that is heard a long way; clapping two boards together, or striking a frying-pan with a poker, is also a good signal, the sound being more distinct, and the quarter it proceeds from more easily distinguished than the heavy boom of a gun through the fog.

March 21st.-Thick, foggy, and calm. The four men went off into the fog in search of their respective vessels. We scarcely stirred all day, and frequently heard guns and signals for lost men, some of whom must have been out on the ice all night. This thick fog is one of the principal causes of danger in a sealing voyage, men having often been lost, being drifted out to sea on the ice, separated perhaps from their vessels by channels suddenly forming, or wandering quite away in the fog, and perishing miserably of cold and hunger on the surface of a frozen sea. We picked up a few young seals, and as one of them was shedding his white coat, we eased him entirely of it, and disclosed his second coat, a beautifully spotted skin of short smooth hair-grey and black. The weather felt quite warm, the thermometer [CHAP. VIII.

he outside noise that to boards h a poker, ing more rom more boom of a

alm. The ch of their d all day, ls for lost en out on one of the g voyage, lrifted out from their , or wanperishing e surface w young dding his of it, and ly spotted nd black. rmometer

CHAP. VIII.] A "

A "ROLLING" PAN.

being above 40°, and we took off the cabin skylight. Ever since we left St. John's we have had flies in the cabin, but now the skylight was full of them, buzzing about till they were quite a nuisance: some were even flying about the deck this morning. After dark we heard a great noise, as of breakers ahead, which we supposed was an iceberg, with the sea beating against it, and therefore, for fear of accidents, we moored the vessel fast to a large thick pan of ice alongside, on which were several upright blocks and masses.

March 22nd.—A beautiful morning, with the wind at north-north-west, quite clear. There were many vessels in sight, ten or a dozen of which had flags flying, signals that they had lost men. One small schooner passed close by us with six men short, whom she could not hear of, but hoped they were on board some vessel or other. We discovered the noise we heard last night to proceed from what is called a "rolling" pan. This was a small iceberg of very irregular shape, about sixty yards across, and its average height above the water about twenty-five feet. It drifted down upon us by the aid of an under current, as there was

03

but little wind, and obliged us to cast off our tow-line and make sail. It was full of hollows at the top and sides, having a pinnacle at one end thirty-five feet high, with a perpendicular wall or cliff. and at the other a round hummock; it consisted of white compact and opaque ice, enclosing at one place a large wedgeshaped mass of blue transparent ice. But what made it most remarkable was its swinging to and fro in the water, dipping first on one side and then the other into the sea, and heaving up tons of water as it rose, that, surging into its hollows, fell back down several channels into the sea, producing a noise and motion exactly like that of breakers. There was but little swell, but what there was sufficed, I suppose, to keep up the rolling, which had, no doubt, been communicated to it where the swell was greater. It was a singular thing to see this great lump of ice thus navigating on a voyage of its own, and not less interesting to speculate on its origin and history. It had probably been once much larger, and was now consummating its own destruction, not only by journeying to the warmer regions of the south, but by its swinging motion, for the water some[CHAP. VIII.

t off our l of holpinnacle perpena round pact and e wedge-**But** what nging to one side heaving ing into channels otion exwas but d, I suphad, no iere the thing to ing on a esting to It had was now only by e south, er some-

CHAP. VIII.]

ICEBERG.

times washed right across its middle, where it was low, and was thus actually sawing it in two: its sides too were scratched and scored in all directions, probably from knocking and rubbing against other pieces of ice : it was in some parts covered with snow, part of which struck me as being rather discoloured and dirty, but it had no signs of gravel or pebbles. The discolouration might have been caused by the presence of seals, as we had frequently seen large patches of ice dirty and discoloured, in spots where the seals had brought forth their young, which are called by the men " whelping-grounds." Sailed slowly during the day, and in the evening sent out a punt or two, which, just before dark, brought in an old hooded seal, two old harp-seals, and several young ones.

There was a beautiful aurora this evening, exhibiting the usual arch or undulating band of glancing rays, from the north-east to the northwest, passing over both the Bears. The principal mass of light was in the north-east, and it seemed to travel slowly towards the north-west. To me the rays seemed to glance upwards perpendicularly from the earth, and the arched

appearance, as well as the radiation from a supposed centre, was probably due to perspective and to the different angles under which the various parts met the eye of the spectator. The light was fainter in the centre, and more full towards each extremity of the arch; and the arch, instead of being perpendicular to the earth's surface, like the rainbow, appeared horizontal, or rather as if it were part of a circle parallel to a plane which formed a tangent to a point on the surface of the earth some distance to the north of us. From such a flat, circular, and sinuous band if rays be supposed to glance perpendicularly upwards, while an undulating motion travels along the band itself, the form of the phenomenon will be described as it appeared to me. I do not feel myself competent even to speculate on the cause of the phenomenon; but it has since struck me that if a tangent plane were to pass through the magnetic pole,* and at some distance above this, but parallel to it, there were a wavy or sinuous circular band of light, having a point above the magnetic pole for its

* Meaning, of course, the one situated just north of America.

[CHAP. VIII.

om a superspective h the vaor. The more full and the ar to the appeared part of a ormed a he earth om such rays be upwards, long the enon will I do not ulate on has since e to pass ome disere were ht, have for its

t north of

CHAP. VIII.]

THE AURORA.

centre, and a radius of some ten or twenty degrees of latitude or equatorial longitude, with rays glancing upwards from the band parallel to the magnetic axis of the earth, and an undulating motion communicated to the whole, it would produce the appearance most commonly observed by me in the aurora seen in Newfoundland. This appearance, however, was by no means constant, a diffused yellow light being sometimes alone observable.

March 23rd.—A furious north and northwest wind with driving snow-storms. Sailed under a close-rected fore-topsail through some open pools of water, and then, being brought up in a compact field of ice, furled all sail and moored to a large pan, where there were some seals about us. The men picked up two or three, but could not go far because of the blinding snowdrift. The thermometer was down at 18° in the middle of the day. All hands snug under hatches the whole of the afternoon.

March 24th.—Fine morning, clear, but cold, with a light wind from the west-north-west. There were six or eight vessels in sight. The ice was rather loose and interspersed with lolly, and the men were bringing in a few seals, but

had to go a long way for them. Among them was the pelt of a female hood-seal and two young hoods, one of which had not long been whelped. As we were at dinner to-day we heard an outcry on deck, and on running forward found a fine young shark lying on a pan of ice alongside the vessel. A pile of sealpelts had been gradually collected on the pan, which touched the bows of the vessel, and two men were standing on it, helping to hoist them on board, when the shark, attracted, no doubt, by the pleasant savour, poked his nose up over the side of the pan, and the men immediately hooked him with their gaffs, and dragged him on to the pan without his making any great resistance. He was about ten feet long, and he lay quietly enough, giving merely an occasional lash with his tail, and suffered us to roll him over and haul him about with our gaffs. Stuwitz, of course, did not lose the opportunity of sketching his form, taking his dimensions, and cutting him up. In his stomach we found the hinder part of a young seal, part of a flatfish, and a small fish like a gurnet. His liver was six feet long, and occupied the greater part of his inside. Both.

CHAP. VIII.

ng them and two ong been -day we ning foron a pan of sealthe pan, and two to hoist acted, no his nose men imaffs, and his makbout ten , giving tail, and aul him urse, did his form, him up. part of a mall fish ong, and e. Both.

CHAP. VIII.]

A SHARK.

his eyes were dull and opaque, and very much sunk in his head: they were apparently diseased, and each had a parasitical animal adhering to it (a hernæopod), about an inch and a half long, having two arms springing from its body, that joined to form a small cupshaped sucker by which they were attached. The structure of the shark's nose was very curious and delicate, having internally a series of rows of filaments on a common base, something like the gill of a fish. The five holes in his neck to admit water to his gills, his elastic jaws containing a fringe of teeth, and his extensive gullet armed with small hooked teeth pointing inwards, were among his best-known charac-His flesh was beautifully white, and teristics. the arrangement of its flakes and fibres very curious and beautiful. We had some of it dressed for tea, and found it not badly tasted, but rather tough and dry, something like an old halibut. He scarcely moved while being cut up, but seemed almost as much alive after having his inside cleaned out and being slit open from head to tail, as he was before. About an hour and a half afterwards, on cutting down through the head into the brain and

spinal marrow, he gave one or two vigorous lashes with his tail, after which there was no more motion. After taking what parts of it Stuwitz wished to preserve, we left his carcass on the ice, a prey to the seals, if they chose to accept of it. Of these latter we had brought on board to-day 356, making now 4186 as our total number on board.

March 25th.-Most beautiful morning, with a light breeze from the south-west. We lay nearly all day tightly jammed among strong ice, of which the whole surface, being covered with newly-fallen snow, was most dazzling under the bright sun. Several vessels about us, one of which, a schooner, was as full as she could hold, and was accordingly homeward-bound. A number of icebergs were in sight on all sides of us, none of them very near, and none of them in any way remarkable, except for mere peculiarities of shape or size. One, however, had a dark band, apparently of blue transparent ice, traversing its upper portion, in a nearly horizontal direction. I certainly do not understand in what way icebergs are formed, or how so a large body of compact solid ice can accumulate. Whenever this blue ice occurs in them, I

CHAP. VIII. J FORMATION OF ICEBERGS.

take it to have resulted from a pool of fresh water having formed, either from rain or melted snow, on the surface of the iceberg, and being subsequently frozen, and then buried under other accumulations of white opaque ice. I question very much whether any mass of transparent ice is ever formed in sea-water; and I am also inclined to believe that nearly all sea-ice is the result of snow saturated with cold salt-water and then frozen, rather than the actual congelation of the water of the sea. About noon the sky clouded over, and we had a heavy snow-storm, with a gale from the north-east.

March 26th.—Fine, but cloudy; thermometer at ten A.M. 32°. Made sail to the northeast slowly through thick ice. In the afternoon there was a silver thaw, that is, rain freezing as it falls, and covering everything with a coating of clear ice. Our masts, yards, and rigging seemed to be cased in glass. A young hood-seal being brought on board, Stuwitz drew, and measured him, but as it got dark, we put his carcass into a punt to dissect in the morning.

March 27th.—A gale from the south-west. On coming on deck this morning we could not

[CHAP. VIII.

vigorous e was no arts of it is carcass chose to ought on 6 as our

ing, with We lay g strong covered dazzling about us. he could l-bound. all sides of them re pecur, had a rent ice. ly horilerstand how so accumuthem, I

find our seal, and on inquiry discovered that the middle-watch had eaten him during the night. The constant employment of the men on deck, when they had nothing else to do, was boiling, frying, or roasting pieces of seal flesh and eating them. Immediately after a dinner or breakfast down below, they would come on deck and set to work at the seal by way of dessert. Their constant food both at sea or on shore being fish or salt pork, fresh meat is at all times a luxury to them, even though it be that of a seal. It is amusing enough, however, that more than one half of the men going to the ice are Irishmen, and strict Roman Catholics, who would rather undergo any privation than eat meat on their fast-days, which in Newfoundland are Fridays and Saturdays. I had always found during the previous summer that my men, if there were no fish to be had, would confine themselves to bread and butter and tea on those days, even while undergoing the hardest labour. The good fathers of the church, however, either in pure ignorance of natural history, or by a little pious fraud, willing to indulge their flock during the cold and hardships of a seal-

CHAP. VIII.] SEALS DECLARED TO BE FISH.

307

[CHAP. VIII.

d that the he night. on deck, s boiling, lesh and linner or come on y way of it sea or h meat is hough it gh, howthe men trict Roergo any fast-days, and Saring the ere were emselves ose days, t labour. however. story, or lge their of a sealing voyage, have come to a unanimous determination that seals are fish! * I by no means wish to disturb the consciences of any of the men in so very harmless a matter, and hope that seals may still be reckoned to be fish; but I am afraid I rather staggered one man by asking him if he ever heard of any fish that had hot blood, and that suckled their young. In the mean time we determined to try what sort of food a young seal was, and ordered one to be cooked for dinner. He was towed through the water great part of the morning, then parboiled, and afterwards cut up and fried with onions. In this way it really was not bad : the flesh was rather dark and strong, but by no means so disagreeable as that of some sea-birds I have eaten.

There was a fine aurora at night, consisting of a bright undulating band just visible above the horizon, with glancing rays shooting upward.

March 28th, 29th, 30th, and 31st.—Nothing remarkable happened during these four days.

* I have, however, an idea that this determination is not confined to Newfoundland, but that in the old rules of the church, seals, otters, whales, porpoises, and all cetacea and amphibia are classed as fish.

There was moderate weather the whole time, and one day we took off the skylight to let in some fresh air and let out the flies which annoyed us. We sailed about in various directions among loose ice, picking up a hooded seal or two now and then. Captain Furneaux says he never knew the field-ice so open and thin in this latitude (about 50°) as it was this year. There were very many icebergs about, some of them of large size, but in none could I see any signs of pebbles or boulders.

I saw one day four men attack a party consisting of a male and female hooded seal and their young one; they killed the female and the young one, and shot the male or dog-hood in the water, and hauled him on to a pan : when there, however, he recovered strength, twisted the gaffs out of the men's hands, and, in spite of what all four could do, he got away, and scuffled into the water, where he dived and disappeared.

The following is a summary of what I learned of the seals in Newfoundland :—

There are four species known on the coast. 1. The bay-seal. 2. The harp-seal. 3. The hooded-seal. 4. The square fipper.

CHAP. VIII.] THE NEWFOUNDLAND SEALS.

(CHAP. VIII. hole time, to let in which andirections d seal or eaux says and thin this year. t, some of I see any

barty conl seal and male and dog-hood an : when h, twisted , in spite way, and lived and

I learned

the coast. 3. The 1. The bay-seal*, as its name denotes, is confined to the bays and inlets, living on the coast all the year round, and frequenting the mouths of the rivers and harbours. It is the smallest of the four, and prettily marked with irregular spots of a small size. From what I heard, I am led to suspect that it breeds in the autumn or fall of the year. It is never found on the ice among the seals we had been pursuing.

2. The harp-seal[†] is so named from the old male animal having, in addition to a number of spots, a broad curved line of connected blotches proceeding from each shoulder and meeting on the back above the tail, forming a figure something like an ancient harp or lyre. The female has not this harp, neither has the male till after his second year. The young when born are covered with the white fur already described—they are then called " white coats:" at about five or six weeks old they shed this white coat, and a smooth spotted skin appears—they are then called young harps.

† This is the Phoca Grænlandica, (Müller,) or Greenland seal.

^{*} This I believe to be the common *Phoca vitulina* of Linnæus, which is found on our own coast.

When twelve months old the males are still scarcely to be distinguished from the females, and during that season they are called "bedlamers." The next season the male has assumed The harp-seals, as will have been his harp. gathered from what precedes, herd together, at least during the breeding season, and probably at other times. They are not seen on the coast of Newfoundland at other times, and probably come from the north to the ice-fields on the northern shores of the island for the purpose of bringing forth their young. The mothers leave their young on the ice, and fish about the neighbourhood for their own subsistence, returning occasionally to give suck. We did not absolutely see one suckling her young one, but we found the milk in the mouths and stomachs of one or two young ones that were brought on board, and it was of a thick creamy consistency and of a yellowish white colour. Meanwhile the males are congregated together in the open pools of water, sporting about. The young ones increase in size very rapidly from their birth, and are fattest at about three weeks old, at which time they are almost half the bulk of the old ones. From that time the

[CHAP. VIII.

are still females, females, females, setup: beltaassumed ave been gether, at probably the coast probably ds on the e purpose e mothers fish about absistence,

We did er young ouths and that were ck creamy te colour. d together ng about. y rapidly bout three lmost half t time the CHAP. VIII.] HOODED SEAL.

fat diminishes slightly, although the bulk of the internal body increases.

3. The hooded-seals * are larger than the Their skin is of a lighter grey colour, harps. with many dark irregularly shaped spots and blotches of considerable size. The male, called a dog-hood, is distinguished from the female by the singular hood or bag of soft flesh on his nose. When attacked or alarmed, they inflate this hood so as to cover the face and eyes, and it resists seal-shot. It is impossible to kill a dog-hood, even with a sealing-gun, when he has either his head or his tail turned towards you; and the only way is by shooting him on the side of the head, and a little behind it, so as to strike him in the neck and the base of the The young of this species are not proskull. vided with the thick woolly coat of the young harp-seals, or if they are it is shed very shortly after birth. They have whitish bellies and dark grey backs, which when wet have a bluish tinge, whence they are called "blue-backs." Those which were brought on board alive seemed much tamer and more gentle than the

* This species is the Stemmatopus cristatus of F. Cuvier. (See the article SEAL in the 'Penny Cyclopædia.')

white coats, and when teased did not offer to scratch and bite so much as the others. Their fat is not so thick, and they are consequently of inferior value. The hooded-seals do not form such large herds as the harps, and the male and female seem to keep more together, both being commonly seen near the young one. The hooded-seals generally bring forth their young two or three weeks later than the harps, and they always occupy different districts, the hoods being generally found farthest In the stomach of the old to the north. hooded-seal which we opened we found nothing but portions of squids, and two or three undigested beaks of large cuttle-fish.

4. The "square fipper"* is described as being much larger than the hooded-seal. It is, however, very rare; and we did not see one or hear of one being seen this season.

The morse, or sea-horse, is occasionally met with and killed by the seal-hunters, and not unfrequently a white bear or two. We only

* I do not know what is the scientific name of this seal, or whether he has been described at all. Captain Furneaux told us they were sometimes twelve, and, if I recollect rightly, even fifteen feet long. It may possibly be the *Phoca* barbata of Müller.). [CHAP. VIII.

not offer to iers. Their onsequently do not form nd the male gether, both young one. forth their er than the ifferent disund farthest of the old e found notwo or three sh.

lescribed as led-seal. It not see one on.

sionally met rs, and not . We only

me of this seal, ptain Furneaux , if I recollect ly be the *Phoca*

CHAP. VIII.]

THE WHITE BEAR.

heard of one of the latter being seen this year, and it was fought some time by the men with their gaffs, dodging it from pan to pan, till at last one or two, coming up with their guns, shot him. We did not hear of this, however, till after our return to St. John's. White and other foxes are also occasionally found on the ice.

There is no certain rule to be adhered to in searching for the herds of seals, the great secret of success being constant activity and pushing about through the ice till they are met with, making for the strongest and largest fields of ice, and watching the set of the currents, the winds, and other circumstances which are likely to lead to them.

April 1st.—Thick and foggy, wind southwest; sailing to the south-east through bays of water. Saw a punt's crew of a schooner near us kill a family of hooded-seals, consisting of the male, female, and young one. Distinctly observed the male blow up his hood as the men approached. The hooded-seals are more fearless, and show more fight when attacked, than the harps: they will, however, always get away if they can. The men say VOL. I.

that if they can once kill the female, they are sure of the rest, as the young one does not stir, and the dog will not go far from the spot, but keeps continually popping his head up in the holes and pools about, growling and whining after his mate.

It was quite a pleasure to have a little clear sailing this morning, after being so long stuck fast in the ice. The thermometer at nine. A.M.. showed 35°, and in the middle of the day the fog cleared off, and we had beautiful weather. We moored the vessel to a large pan of ice, and filled all our water-casks from a pool of clear water in its hollows, taking the opportunity also of getting a good wash ourselves, a luxury we could not very often enjoy. There were several vessels about us, two of which had not seen a single white-coat this season, so capriciously scattered are the herds of seals. There was a very singular island of ice a few miles to the south of us. It rose to a height of about one hundred feet, and resembled the worn and ruined cone of a volcano. At about half its height was a platform sloping to the north, and round three of its sides a thin wall of ice rose up sloping inwards, and was pierced

CHAP. VIII.

e, they are e does not from the g his head owling and

little clear long stuck nine, A.M., he day the il weather. oan of ice. a pool of the opporourselves, joy. There which had n, so caprils. There w miles to it of about e worn and ut half its the north, wall of ice as pierced

CHAP. VIII.]

ICE ISLAND.

towards the south by a great arch somewhat resembling a Gothic window. The sloping platform was strewed with blocks of ice, fragments, probably, of its surrounding walls. As it was in the direction in which we intended or expected to proceed, we hoped to get a nearer view of it. The crew amused themselves this afternoon with jumping-matches on the snow, and dancing reels on the ice, to which I added darting at a mark with the gaffs, till the captain put a stop to that part of it by begging us not to spoil any more of his gaffs. By an amplitude observed at sunset this evening with my prismatic compass, I found the variation to be as nearly 38° as possible. The sunset was clear and beautiful, lighting up the icebergs with hues of liquid gold and rose colour; and at night the aurora was very fine, having, in addition to the appearance I have already described, a diffused yellow light over the whole heavens, except the south. On looking at the zenith there appeared to be a slight radiation from, or rather an apparent convergence to it, produced by perspective.

April 2nd.—A most lovely morning, with a light breeze from the west. Unmoored and

Р2

made sail slowly through the ice to the south, with the temperature at 33°, at 10 A.M. The arched iceberg is now south-west of us, and we can see its other side; the arch now appeared to be round below as well as above, and below it there floated a larger piece with a projecting pinnacle, that may probably have been detached from some part of the iceberg. It was still three miles from us, and the ice intersected with many small channels and lakes of water, rendering an attempt to reach it on foot highly dangerous, as the ice frequently separates and breaks up without warning given, and even a narrow channel might cut us off from the vessel. Taking a punt would be hazardous, for the opposite reason, as the ice might close in and oblige us to abandon it. The latter predicament was one in which a punt's crew and myself were nearly caught this afternoon. We had gone out where the ice was much divided into channels and pools of water, but it gradually closed in upon us, and we had much difficulty in forcing our way back to the vessel, being obliged to get out on opposite sides of the boat and force the pans asunder with our gaffs

CHAP. VIII.] CATCHING A YOUNG HARP-SEAL.

to make a passage for her. We brought a young harp on board alive, with its new coat on. Tying a line round one of its hinder fippers, we let it swim about near the vessel, which it did with great grace and agility, diving and rising again to the surface, and occasionally crawling out on a pan of ice. The beautiful clearness of the water enabled us to watch all its motions. It swam like a fish, principally by the motion of its body, closing and spreading out its hinder fippers into the exact form of the tail of a fish. Nestor jumped over into the water and swam up to it; but when the seal saw him approach it raised itself upright in the water, and when within reach attacked him tooth and nail, biting him severely in the lip, and making master Nestor turn tail immediately. Their heads and bodies are so round and smooth, that a dog cannot seize them anywhere except in the fippers.

April 3rd and 4th.—Continued our route to the southward slowly, the ice becoming more open and broken. Many icebergs were still in sight, and several vessels bound homeward like ourselves. In the afternoon of the

CHAP. VIII.

the south, A.M. The of us, and h now apabove, and ece with a bably have he iceberg. and the ice nnels and ot to reach he ice frethout warnnnel might ing a punt site reason, blige us to nt was one vself were had gone vided into t gradually h difficulty essel, being des of the th our gaffs

4th a thrush (turdus migratorius), very common in Newfoundland in the summer, and called there a blackbird, though it has a brown body and a red breast like a robin, flew several times about the vessel, hopping about and appearing lively and in good condition. The men said they had sometimes seen them in flocks on the ice in the beginning of April, and that two or three would often come on board and stay with them till they neared the land, picking up the crumbs and making themselves quite at home. This evening the lakes of water became wider, and as we sailed to the southward the swell gradually increased, till during the night I was awakened by the vessel rocking as if in the open sea.

April 5th.—A very heavy gale blowing from south-west. We have the vessel to, under the lee of a thin skirt of ice, and I witnessed the sea in the grandest aspect I think I ever saw it. There was no ice to windward of us but this thin skirt about a mile broad, which was marked into small round pieces about a foot wide, forming a perfect mosaic pavement on a gigantic scale. This was sufficient to prevent the formation of the numberless flickering wayes

[CHAP. VIII.

very comimer, and as a brown lew several at and apcol. The n them in of April, n come on neared the ad making evening the s we sailed y increased, ned by the

wing from under the tnessed the I ever saw of us but which was bout a foot ement on a to prevent ering waves

CHAP. VIII.] THE

THE ICE IN A SWELL.

and crests of foam and spray into which the surface of the sea is lashed by a gale of wind, but it offered no impediment to the swell. The unbroken swell of the Atlantic ocean accordingly rolled in upon us in huge continuous ridges, heaving the pavement of ice on its mighty folds, and alternately lifting us on its broad domes and swallowing us in its deep hollows. The absence of all minor waves made the primary undulations to be felt in their true magnitude, and it was certainly a magnificent sight. Grand as was the sight, however, I would in a short time have gladly exchanged it for a station on the solid ice again, as both Stuwitz and I began to be sea-sick. More than half the crew. I found, followed our example, and for the next day or two barely enough of the watch were left on deck to manage the vessel.

April 6th.—When the wind moderated a little, we made sail to the south, and in a short time left all the ice behind us. At noon we were in lat. 50° 41', supposed longitude 50°, with the wind at west-south-west, apparently moderating.

April 7th to 11th.—One continued gale from south-west to north-west, with very heavy sea

running; top-gallant yards sent down on deck, and with close-reefed fore and mainsails, &c. trying to make what head we could by beating up to the westward, but the wind constantly turning against us on both tacks. By soundings, we found ourselves to be on the banks, and supposed we were on the inner or western edge of We accordingly ran down as far as lat. them. 47°, and then tacked at 47° and 49° alternately, St. John's being in 47° 33', and the current supposed to set to the southward. Meanwhile, our seals began to run, the pumps brought up morning and evening a lot of thick white stuff like syllabub or soap-suds, the mixture of the seal-oil and salt bilge-water, being agitated in the pump. The ship accordingly was perceived to stink most awfully, and everything on board, including the bulk-heads of the cabin, began to sweat with grease. Our clothes, also, became smooth and polished, especially where there was any pressure. Our fresh stores had long been exhausted, as also our wine and spirits, and we were now reduced to tea and the common rum, and had not much of that left. At last, in the afternoon of the 11th. the wind moderated and shifted into the north, the sea

CHAP. VIII.] ARRIVAL IN NEWFOUNDLAND.

CHAP. VIII.

on deck, s, &c. tryeating up ntly turndings, we and supm edge of far as lat. lternately, he current Ieanwhile, brought up white stuff ure of the agitated in s perceived g on board, n, began to so, became vhere there s had long and spirits, d the comat left. At , the wind rth, the sea

went down, and we got a fair run to the westward, and at sunset some of the men thought they could see Cape St. Francis in a bank of fog to the northward, when it fell nearly calm.

April 12th.-About three o'clock this morning we were awakened by the happy intelligence that the lighthouse of Cape Spear was in sight, and coming on deck at daylight, we had the pleasure of seeing the bold and barren coast of Cape Spear and its neighbourhood about fifteen miles from us. The snow had all disappeared, except in the hollows and crevices of About eight o'clock a light breeze the cliffs. sprung up from the south-west, that just sufficed to carry us into the narrows before noon. We found the harbour full of vessels, and the first boat that boarded us brought us the intelligence that many vessels had come in with five, six, and even seven thousand seals on board; that some had sailed a fortnight ago on their second trip; and that seals were in consequence down as low as 15s. the cwt. This lengthened the visages of our crew perceptibly, they having expected 18s. a cwt. Stuwitz and I were, however, too busy in landing and getting away to our lodgings to trouble our-

selves about matters that did not concern us: and when there, we bathed first in hot water and then in eau de Cologne, ordering all our clothes to be hung out of doors, as we observed that the acquaintances whom we met as we passed through the streets studiously got on the windward side of us; and I have no doubt had we been turned out to be hunted, we should have left a "burning scent" behind us. Upon the whole, we were highly pleased with our expedition to the ice, which we could not have seen under more favourable circumstances. It was a very good season : one vessel in two trips brought in eleven thousand seals; and the total take this year must have been considerably upwards of five hundred thousand.

END OF VOLUME I.

London : Printed by WILLIAM CLOWES and Sons, Stamford Street.

AND. [CHAP. VIII.

t concern us; in hot water ering all our we observed e met as we sly got on the no doubt had d, we should d us. Upon sed with our ould not have nstances. It l in two trips and the total considerably .

tamford Street.

-

